

**17881**

**The  
Ramakrishna Mission Institute of Culture Library  
CALCUTTA.**

**LATE FEE : 5 P. per day after the last date stamped below.**

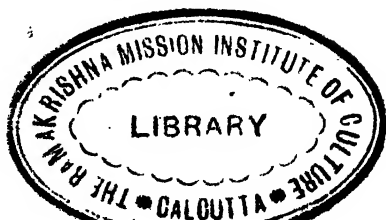
**RENEWALS : By post, telephone or in person. Please quote the number stamped on the pocket opposite and last date below.**

**7 FEB 1973**

**30 SEP 1972**

**22 MAR 1995**

**P.T.O. = 9 RMICL P 7**











# INDIA'S SERVICES IN THE WAR

M. B. L. BHARGAVA, B.A.



Popular Edition.



1st Edition.

Price Rs. 6.

R M C LIBRARY	
Acc. No.	17881
Class No.	9403
	BHA
Date	
St. Card	
Class.	✓
Cat.	✓
Bk. Card	✓
Checked	am

---

PRINTED BY BISHAMBHER NATH BHARGAVA,  
 AT THE STANDARD PRESS, ALLAHABAD  
 AND  
 PUBLISHED BY THE AUTHOR,  
 45, GANESHGANJ, LUCKNOW.

---

## FOREWORD

India's glory is her loyalty to the British Crown. She has added undying lustre to that glory by her services to the Empire at a moment of supreme peril. It is the object of these pages to rear those services into a monument of India's tribute. The author has approached his theme from a transcendental point of view and not from any spirit of boast. India seeks no reward, favour or concession for those services. She cries for justice. Is the 'brotherhood between England and India established on the battle field to abide after the war'? The learned author in an able and impressive manner gives facts and figures to demonstrate the 'brotherhood' and silently asks for an answer to that question. In my judgment the author has done immense services to our country and deserves thanks of all rightminded people. Let us all hope that his appeal and labour may not go in vain and England may rise to its supreme duty of doing justice to India.

WAZIR HASAN.

*1st July, 1919.*

**Dedicated**

WITH

**PROFOUND LOVE FOR THE MOTHERLAND**

AND

**HUMBLE GRATITUDE AND RESPECT**

FOR ALL THOSE

**WHO ARE ENGAGED IN HER ADVANCEMENT**

TO

*THE SACRED MEMORY*

OF

**THOSE BRAVE HEROES, INDIAN AND BRITISH**

WHO

*SACRIFICED THEIR LIVES IN THE WAR*

TO SAVE

**THE WORLD FROM GERMAN MILITARISM &**

**THUS CONTRIBUTED THE GREATEST**

**TO THE FUTURE**

**PEACE, PROSPERITY AND HAPPINESS OF HUMANITY**

BY

**THE AUTHOR.**

# CONTENTS.

	<i>Page.</i>
Author's Preface	iii
Foreword	vii
Dedication	ix

## PART I.

### *General Services.*

CHAPTER I. The Causes of the War	1
CHAPTER II. Germany and India	13
CHAPTER III. Why India helped Great Britain	28
CHAPTER IV. The First Wave of Enthusiasm	37
CHAPTER V. Indian Financial Contribution	50
CHAPTER VI. India's Services in Men	74
CHAPTER VII. The Indian Defence Force,	93
CHAPTER VIII. Some Indian Heroes	112
CHAPTER IX. India's Services in Materials ..	127
CHAPTER X. The Indian Musalmans and the War	138
CHAPTER XI. The Services of the Indian Press	153
CHAPTER XII. The Educated and Political Classes and the War	174
CHAPTER XIII. The Services and Sacrifices of the Masses	192
CHAPTER XIV. The Services of the Indian womanhood	201

	<i>Page.</i>
CHAPTER XV. Indian Students and the War	213
CHAPTER XVI. The Bengalee Soldiers ...	21
CHAPTER XVII. The Indian Native States and the War ... ..	2

## PART II.

*Some Individual's Services.*

CHAPTER I. His Majesty King George V ...	237
CHAPTER II. H. E. H. The Nizam of Hyderabad ... ..	242
CHAPTER III. H. H. Maharaja Gaekwar of Baroda ... ..	258
CHAPTER IV. H. H. Maharaja of Bikaner ...	262
CHAPTER V. Her Highness the Begam of Bhopal ... ..	273
CHAPTER VI. His Highness Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh ... ..	284
CHAPTER VI (a). H. H. Nawab of Ram- pur ... ..	290(a)
CHAPTER VII. The Maharaja Bahadur of Balrampur ... ..	291
The Raja of Jehangirabad ... ..	305
The Raja of Tamkohi ... ..	305
CHAPTER VIII. The Maharaja Dhiraj of Burdwan ... ..	306
CHAPTER IX. The Maharaja Bahadur of Durbhanga ... ..	310

	<i>Page.</i>
CHAPTER X. Sir Dorab Tata and the Tata Concerns ... ..	313
CHAPTER XI. Rani Phulkumari of Sherkot...	322
CHAPTER XII. Nawab Zoolquadar Jung Bahadur ... ..	326

### PART III.

#### *Some Indian Administrative Problems and the War.*

CHAPTER I. The Constitutional Reforms	333
CHAPTER II. Indian Cotton Duties ...	345
CHAPTER III. Development of Industries ...	350
CHAPTER IV. The Educational Problem ...	360
CHAPTER V. King's Commissions in the Army	364
CHAPTER VI. Indias Status in the Empire...	372
CHAPTER VII. The Arms Act. . . . .	376
CHAPTER VIII. Indian Emigration to the Colonies ... ..	382
CHAPTER IX. Elevation of Lord Sinha ...	386
CHAPTER X. The Chief's Conference ...	391
CHAPTER XI. The Defence of India Act, The Rowlatt Act, The Punjab and other disturbances and the martial Law ... ..	395
CHAPTER XII. Conclusion ... ..	406
Appendix ... ..	409

### LIST OF PORTRAITS.

	<i>Facing page.</i>
(1) His Majesty the King ... ..	337
(2) H. E. Lord Hardinge ... ..	79



*Facing page,*

(3)	H. E. H. The Nizam of Hyderabad...	242
(4)	Her Highness The Begum of Bhopal,	273
(5)	H. H. Maharaja Scindhia of Gwalior,	52
(6)	H. H. Maharaja of Bikaner ...	263
(7)	H. H. Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh ...	284
(8)	H. H. Maharaja Gaekwar of Baroda	258
(9)	H. H. The Nawab of Rampur ...	290a
(10)	The Maharaja Bahadur of Balrampur,	291
(11)	The Maharaja Bahadur of Burdwan	306
(12)	Nawab Zool Quadar Jung ...	326
(13)	The Hon'ble Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya ... ..	174
(14)	Mr. Balgangadhar Tilak ..	181
(15)	Mr. M. K. Gandhi ... ..	182
(16)	Hon'ble Babu Surrendra Nath Banerji	189
(17)	Mrs. Sarojini Naidu ... ..	201
(18)	Rt. Hon'ble Lord Sinha of Raipur ...	386





---

# **India's Services in the War.**

## **PART I.**

### **GENERAL SERVICES.**

---





## CHAPTER I.

---

### The Causes of the War.

Before the war actually broke out in 1914, the whole of Europe had been in dread of it for, at least, a quarter of a century, if not more. Some powers were making huge military preparations, others were watching these preparations askance with a considerable anxiety. Germany, for instance, was piling armaments upon armaments almost to an indefinite extent, thus laying not only an unbearable financial burden upon her peoples but also robbing them of their most valuable possessions that a good government can give, namely, peace of mind and undisturbed pursuit of innocent pleasures. All political, social and economic problems were placed in the background. Factories which manufactured cloth for the protection of people against weather and scientific apparatus for probing the secrets of nature in order to make the life of man more happy, were being converted into ammunition workshops; labourers and workmen were drifted on from their peaceful avocations to the manufacture of engines of destruction; even women who are the mothers of mankind and whose natural occupation is the bringing up of good citizens of state were not left

alone. They were not only required to replace men in civil occupations from which they were constantly being transferred to munition factories, but were actually employed in these factories. Why was all this if not for the fact that Germany, in secret alliance with certain other powers, to be named hereafter, was bent to disturb the peace of the world? Some other powers, chiefly England, were anxious to keep the peace. They made every effort that was humanly possible, in the interests of peace but they could only delay and not avert the actual warfare. At one time they hoped to delay it indefinitely but their hopes were shattered and their labours in the noble mission proved in vain when, on the 28th June, 1914, the Arch-Duke Franz Ferdinand, the heir to the throne of Austria-Hungary, was assassinated with his wife in Serajivo, the capital of Bosnia. The murderer was a young Bosnian; but it was soon discovered that the assassination was not the casual act of a single individual but there was, in fact, had been, a regular plot which had its centre in Servia. In ordinary times and circumstances even such an organised plot and assassination would have been dealt with in a different manner. But Austria who was a confederate of Germany and who was under her complete influence was, like her ally, only waiting for an opportunity to declare war on some body, be it Servia or any other country. This act was, therefore, made at once into a state grievance

and without waiting for any further development, Austria, on the 23rd July, sent to the Government of Serbia an ultimatum embodying her demands. Not only the demands were of a nature that it was utterly impossible and dishonourable for Serbia to accept them, but no time was allowed to her for consideration and consultation, if necessary. It was stated that if the demands were not accepted by Serbia at once and in entirety, war was to be declared. What these demands were, it is not necessary to mention here. It is enough that Serbia, as was natural and right, did not accept the ultimatum unconditionally. The result was Austria declared war against Serbia on the 28th July, 1914.

Austria knew that Germany would back her, as previous negotiations had already taken place about it. Germany knew that Austria's declaration of war against Serbia was to serve only as a spark to lit up the future world-wide conflagration. She knew all along that Russia would not remain neutral and would come to help Serbia at any cost. Germany, therefore, came out with the statement that she would allow no European power to interfere in the affairs of Austria and Serbia. On the 29th July, however, Russia began, as was expected, to mobilise her army. This was considered by Germany to be a sufficient excuse for sending an ultimatum to Russia and to declare war against her which she did on the

1st of August. An ultimatum was sent to France also on the 31st July and without waiting for a reply, Germany, on the following day, violated the neutrality of Luxemburg and, without even the formality of declaring war, invaded France. England had all along been strenuously working in the interests of peace as is obvious from the Diplomatic correspondence between her and several other European powers that was going on at the time and that was, later on, published in a book form. She was not quite successful in her efforts, only Italy declared herself neutral at the time but even her neutrality was not to last long as later events testify. Britain asked Germany and France if they would respect the neutrality of Belgium in accordance with the then existing international obligations. France replied in the affirmative at once. but Germany sent an evasive reply saying that to answer that question would be to reveal her plans. The meaning of these words was legible even to the swiftest runner. In the meantime, Belgium had sent an appeal to Britain for help which the latter could not reject or discard. England was, thus, obliged to give up all attempts for peace and to send an ultimatum to Germany and declare war against her which she did on 4th of August, 1914. A memorable day in the history of the British Empire!

The world was rightly suspecting all along why events followed each other in such dramatic succession but after long last it has been proved by most reliable

evidence that Germany and Austria were maturing a plot secretly for bringing about the war. The plot was disclosed later on.

The decision to start a European war was taken at a Council over which the Kaiser presided in Berlin on July 5, 1914. The principal persons present at the council were the Austrian Arch-duke Frederick, the German Chancellor, Admiral von Tirpitz, General von Falkenhayn, the Chief of the German Military Staff, the Austrian Foreign Secretary, the Hungarian Prime Minister and the Chief of the Austrian Military Staff. They discussed and settled at that council a plan of procedure which could have only one result, *viz.*, to force Europe into war.

It was a secret council and for a long time its secret was well kept. When Herr Haase, a member of the German Parliament, in July, 1917, referred to "the conference in Berlin on July 5, 1914," very few people even in Germany and Austria knew what he was talking about.

We know all about it to-day. The facts have been revealed by witnesses whose evidence no one can doubt. They are German witnesses, men of high position. Dr. Halffterich, formerly Director of the greatest German Bank and afterwards German Imperial Minister of Finance; Dr. Muhlon, Director of Krupp's great armament works at Essen, Herr Krupp von Bohlen the head



of that great firm; and Baron Wangenheim, German Ambassador at Constantinople.

From July 5th to 23rd Austria and Germany did everything in their power to prevent any one realising their intentions.

The Kaiser in order to make people think that he was only thinking of peace and happiness went on a yachting trip to Norway. The Chancellor left Berlin for a rest. Meantime the German financiers were getting their finances ready as quickly as possible for war.

This is the outward genesis of the war. What were the deeper causes why Austria attacked Serbia, why Russia came to the help of Serbia, why Germany intervened to assist Austria, why France joined with Russia, why Italy remained neutral at the time, why England sided with France and made the violation of the neutrality of Belgium a cause of war? To discuss these in their true perspective is to go into the somewhat ancient history of Europe, but such a course will be ill adapted for the purposes of this volume. Briefly stated, Austria had a long standing grievance against Serbia. More than half of the population of Austria was made up of Slavs, of which more than 5 millions were Serbs who had natural tendencies to side with Serbia whenever there was a controversy or quarrel between the two governments. Serbia was also carrying on and encouraging a pro-Serbian propaganda amongst

Austrian subjects which Austria did not like. There was another reason also. Germany and Austria had some other objects in view and a strong Serbia was an impediment in their way. Germany had cast a longing look upon the Asiatic Dominions of Turkey. Sedulous attempts were being made to cultivate the friendship of the Sultan and concessions for the employment of German capital in Asia Minor and the Euphrates Valley were the result. But the road to these territories lies through the Balkan Peninsula, and if Serbia became too strong the way would be blocked. Germany and Austria, therefore, decided to reduce Serbia to a nonentity.

It was impossible that Russia could look on with indifference while Serbia was being crushed. When it saw that the murder of the Arch-duke of Austria was being made the excuse for an attack on Servian independence Russia could not but take action. Russia had her own interests in the Balkans but it can be said to her credit that this time it was not self-interest alone which led her to interfere in the matter. The fact is that the Russian and Serbian peoples are closely bound together by the ties of common race and common religion and this was sufficient, in the present instance, to bring the Russians to the assistance of their weaker brethren. It is doubtful whether Russia could have remained neutral at this juncture in face of the powerful wave of Slavonic race feeling that swept over the country.

Why Great Britain and France chose to be each other's allies against Germany is also a question which needs explanation. Some 30 years ago and even later Britain and France were considered all over Europe as natural enemies of each other. As pointed out by Rev. E.M. Macphail in the pages of the "Indian Review," France was irritated by the British occupation of Egypt and various colonial questions were constantly giving rise to friction. In 1898, when Major Marchand occupied Fashada on the Upper Nile, the situation became most dangerous. War fortunately was averted but the feelings between the two nations remained most unfriendly. After the accession of Edward VII, however, a determined effort was made to come to a friendly understanding with France and, in 1904, an agreement was made by which all outstanding causes of quarrel were removed and the *entente cordiale* began. In 1905, France agreed to recognise Britain's position in Egypt and Britain, in return, promised to leave France a free hand in Morocco. An International Conference was held at Algeiras, in 1905, at which Great Britain stood by France while Austria supported Germany. Since then the friendship between these two nations grew closer and this friendship between Great Britain and France led to a greater friendship between Britain and Russia, the ally of France. In 1914 when Germany again intervened in connection with Morocco and tried to browbeat France, Britain again stood by her friend

in the diplomatic conversations which took place and made ready her fleet. Till as late as the Franco-German War, the British people were most friendly inclined towards Germany although there were persons here and there who did not conceal their dislike of Bismark's policy of "blood and iron." When, in 1884, or thereabout, Germany proclaimed to the world that she was anxious to expand her colonial possessions, England made no attempt to prevent her from doing so although the diplomatic methods employed by Bismark were positively provoking. But the same could not be said of Germany. The latter looked at the British Colonial Empire with a deep-seated envy. Those who could see a little below the surface knew that Germany had her own selfish ends to serve through the Boer War in South Africa. She was anxious to establish her own power there. To such persons the famous telegram which the Emperor William sent to President Kruger in January, 1896, on the failure of the Jameison Raid did not cause the astonishment which was felt by most persons in Britain. In fact, from that date, the feeling in Great Britain with respect to Germany perceptibly changed as the British realized that Germany was, in no sense, a friend of Great Britain as she pretended to be. The Boer War might, perhaps, have not taken place had Kruger not fancied that he would receive assistance from Germany. But at that time Germany wisely refrained from active help as she knew that her navy

bore no comparison with that of England. But she learnt a lesson thereby and began to construct a navy at once which, had Great Britain remained inactive, would soon have been the strongest navy in the world. Britain's statesmen began to reflect over the question as to why Germany was constructing such a huge navy and came to the inevitable conclusion that she had no other object in view than to dispute, at an early date, the position of Britain as mistress of the seas and to make herself as supreme on the ocean as she was on land; in fact, her ambition was to make herself the dictator of the whole world. This attitude of hostility on the part of Germany led England, as it was bound to do, to expand and strengthen her navy on the one side and to draw closer to France on the other. The additional financial burden that this course entailed led to an agreement between England and France that if France kept her ships in the Mediterranean, Britain would keep her fleet mainly in the North Sea. It was this agreement that made Britain, when Germany threatened France, explain to Germany that she must protect the coasts of France and the French colonies against the German Fleet. Thus there were two main causes which led England to join with France and Russia against the Central Powers. First, her agreement with France which was the result of the manifest hostilities of Germany; secondly even if England were under no obligation to France she felt she was bound by the

guarantee that she had given for the neutrality and integrity of Belgium. She felt that it would be nothing short of dishonour if she were to turn a deaf ear to Belgium when she appealed to her for assistance against the unprovoked breach of her neutrality by Germany.

An Englishman described England's policy in a nutshell in the following words.

"Much as we deplore war and great as will be the suffering it must entail there are times when war is better than a dishonourable peace and such a time has come, in the history of the British Empire. Great Britain has entered upon war conscious of the righteousness of her cause and has drawn the sword in the interests of justice and liberty."

It has been stated above that Germany and her confederates had been preparing for war for, at least, a quarter of a century. That the actual hostilities and warfare began in 1914 was not accidental but the time was deliberately chosen for the event. England was, at this time, busy with certain of her internal troubles which, though small in themselves, were regarded by Germany to be very serious. The Irish Home Rule problem was being discussed with a vehemence which looked rather serious. The agitation for woman's suffrage had been embarrassing the government in an awful manner. Outside England every body seemed to believe that she was on the verge of a civil war,

although in every country, in every government, sometimes serious internal problems do crop up which cause no small embarrassment to the government before they are properly solved. The French Government had just made an almost humiliating confession of her unpreparedness for military purposes. In Russia, a great strike was going on which might have easily developed into a revolution. The time seemed to Germany quite propitious for settling the Balkan affair in accordance with her own wishes, specially when she could plead, as the cause of the war, the tragedy in which, she thought, she had the sympathy of Europe. It was decided by her, at any rate, to take the risk and to make the Serajivo outrage an excuse for the adoption of a policy of aggression which would restore to her the position she had lost by the Balkan War. But more than this the Central Powers expected that they would have the help, may be indirect, from India. The next chapter will disclose what Germany expected from India and how she tried in vain to seduce her from the right path.



## CHAPTER II.

### Germany and India.

*India is occupied by the British. It is, in a way, governed by the British. But it is, by no means, completely governed by them. We shall not only occupy India, we shall conquer it and the vast revenues that the British allow to be taken by the Indian Princes will, after our conquest, flow, in a golden stream, into the Fatherland. In all the richest lands of the earth the German flag will fly over every other flag.*

THE EX-KAISER.

In the previous chapter an attempt has been made to trace briefly the immediate and the direct causes of the European war. The real objects, however, are to be discovered somewhere deeper. Germany was a nation as civilised as, if not more civilised than, any other European nation. Her people excelled in literature, in science, in trade and industries, in inventions and discoveries but these qualities hardly found any suitable outlet. Germany was ambitious to monopolise the markets of the world for her own commercial exploitation but England stood in her way. She was anxious to establish colonies for her superfluous popu-



lation but her efforts did not meet with any appreciable success. She was jealous of the vastness of the British Empire on which the sun never sets. Her Emperor's lifelong ambition was that Germany should become the foremost world power. Her chancellor was equally vain. "A nation" said Bernhardt once, "of 65,000,000 which stakes all her forces on winning herself a position and in keeping that position cannot be conquered."

The real object which led Germany into this war was the realisation of what is now described as her Eastern dream. The sentence quoted in the beginning of this chapter is an indication of that dream to realise which the German Emperor had been concerting measures since a long time. The distinguished German economist, Roscher, suggested as far back as 1848 that Asia Minor would be the natural share of Germany if and when the Ottoman Empire breaks. After the Franco-German War of 1870, Germany began to take practical measures to realise her objects in the East. In 1880, a Commercial Society was founded in Berlin with a view to promote German 'penetration' of Asia Minor. For some time things remained where they were. When, however, Kaiser Wilhelm assumed control of Germany's foreign policy, the German eastward march began in earnest. After the withdrawal, in 1880, of the British from the strong position they had won at Constantinople, Germany gradually filled the vacancy

and acquired supreme influence over the Sultan. Her instructors reorganised the Turkish army and her commercial travellers over-ran the Turkish Empire. But it was through the astute manipulation of Railway policy that Germany gradually brought Turkey under her complete influence. The Deutsche Bank first secured the right of working the short line from Haidar Pasha opposite Constantinople to Ismidt with a concession for the working of an extension of the line to Angua. In 1899, the Deutsche Bank secured the right to extend the line right up to the Persian Gulf. This led to the Convention of 1903 which gave the Imperial Ottoman Baghdad Railway Company the right to build the line. The company was, for outward purposes, a Turkish company but, even then, the German composition of it was hardly veiled. This line went as far as Basra by a route selected specially for the fulfilment of Germany's desires in the East. The purpose of the Baghdad Railway was entirely strategic. The Sultan Abdul Hamid was told that by the construction of this railway he would be able to move the Anatolian soldiery either into Turkey in Europe if threatened by Russia or the Balkan States or into Mesopotamia to consolidate her precarious hold over the Arabs, regardless of the pressure of any sea power which might be arrayed against him. In this line Germany saw the pleasant possibilities of German troops pouring down the Central European Railways to Constantinople and thence through

Asia Minor to the confines of India to spread fire and sword in this land. The railway was pushed forward with considerable energy and the railhead reached Ras-ul-Ain in the early years of the war. One important link remained unfinished as the passage of the Taurus and Amanus mountains involves nearly a hundred miles of tunnelling and blasting. Much of the line was constructed with a solidity which would not be justified by the traffic possibilities for a generation. This shows that the line was a strategic line from first to last. The object was not only to bring the Turkish Empire under the German thumb but to invade India at the nearest opportunity.

Herr von Gwinner, Managing Director of the Deutsche Bank, and President of the Anatolian and Baghdad Railway Companies, in an interview with a neutral journalist parodying Napoleon's famous dictum, said :—

“As Antwerp has been called a loaded pistol pointed at the heart of England so the double-track of the Baghdad railroad will, some day, be described as a double-barrelled modern automatic pointed at the heart of India.”

The Baghdad Railway was, no doubt, the main instrument of Germany for the East. German intrigues in the Persian Gulf were equally apparent. In 1896 a company of German traders (Wonckhaus & Co.) went to the Persian Gulf to deal in shells and mother of pearl's.

The following year Germany established a vice-Consulate at Bushire. In 1899, the German Cruiser, "Arcona," visited various parts of the Gulf and a party of German scientists halted at Bunder Abbas. In 1900, Herr Sternrich, German Consul-General at Constantinople travelled overland to the Gulf at the head of a mission which included the German military attache at Constantinople. He visited Sheikh Mubarak of Koweit and tried to buy a site at Ras Kadhama at the head of Koweit Bay for the terminus of the Baghdad Railway. But this project failed as the Sheikh was loyal to the treaty with Great Britain which precluded him from leasing any part of his possessions to a foreign power without the consent of the British. Germans then stirred up the Turks to attack him and subsequently egged on Ibn Rashid of Central Arabia to try and seize the town of Koweit. The firm of Wöckhaus made various other attempts to secure a *pied a terre*. The Sheikh of Shargah granted a concession to three Arabs to work the red oxide deposits on the Island of Abu Musa and the Arabs transferred this concession to the German firm. The Sheikh protested and with the assistance of the British officials the intruders were removed. Another German agent sought to obtain an irrigation commission in the Karun. The Hamburg-America Shipping Company entered the Gulf with a great flourish of trumpets and German agents were omnipresent. The whole of this elaborate structure came

crumbling to the ground on the outbreak of the war when the British officials entered into possession of the German entrepôts\*.

From the above it will appear that Germany had a long cherished desire to establish herself in the Eastern Hemisphere and specially in Turkey and India. One of the main objects of the war was the conquest of India, as Sir Dorab Tata pointed out once, the possession of which with her rich resources has, for centuries, been the goal which ambitious nations have been trying to reach. In 1914, Germany was led into the belief that that was the most opportune time when she could succeed in her ambitions by declaring war against those who stood in her way. She believed that England was not in a position to fight against her and if she did, her Colonies and India would rise in revolt against her and help the Germans. To make assurance doubly sure, Germany tried to create civil strife in Ireland, disaffection in Egypt, revolution in Africa, hostility in India and disloyalty in the Mohammedan world. How her attempts proved abortive everywhere has been demonstrated by the events of the last four years and a half. As this volume relates to India in relation to the war an attempt will be made to show why Germany relied on India's support to her and what measures she adopted to get that support.

---

\* Extracted from the War pamphlet No. 6, Germany's Eastern Drive, issued by the Oxford University Press, Bombay.

There was, in fact had been for some time, discontent of political nature in India which Germany saw through magnifying glasses. Of course, not even the staunchest adherent of the present administrative system in India can say that India is or has been governed by Great Britain on the soundest of principles. Her administrators have made mistakes—serious mistakes, sometimes—which led to widespread agitation and grave discontent and unrest. But what country in the world is immune from political discontent? It exists everywhere and so long as the world is inhabited by human beings and is ruled by human beings it is bound to continue. Humanity is always on the path of progress; what it is perfectly satisfied with to-day it is dissatisfied with to-morrow. It aspires for better and better things. In this sense discontent is a virtue and the absence of it from a nation is an indication of decay. There was this discontent in India, although, it must be admitted that there were to be met with stray instances where disloyalty to the British connection was the chief motive; but these instances were so extremely rare that they did not require any serious attention from the government and the people. During Lord Curzon's regime as Viceroy and Governor-General of India, however, the events took a serious turn. First, the Universities Act was introduced which provoked much controversy as it was designed, so the educated India believed, to limit the numbers of Indians educated in English and thus

to retard national advance. The opposition to this measure had not died out when the Government projected, in 1905, a partition of the province of Bengal. Whether this measure was, from the administrative point of view, good, bad or indifferent, it is not relevant to discuss here but there can be no two opinions about the fact that the country resented it, smelled danger in it and opposed it tooth and nail. Agitation unprecedented in the annals of British India immediately followed. There was the Swadeshi, there was the boycott, and finally the pistol, the sword and the bomb appeared on the scene. There were murders, there were executions. These were followed by coercive and repressive measures from the other side, *viz.*, the government. Deportations, internments and externments of public leaders were resorted to, repressive laws such as the Press Act, the Seditious Meetings Act and the like were used wholesale; all this led to an increase instead of a diminution in political crimes. This state of affairs continued till the King himself came to India and removed the cause that led to these unhappy consequences. The Royal visit calmed the atmosphere a great deal but the indiscreet act of Lord Curzon left some of its indelible marks upon the country. It was in those times of considerable unrest that some dissatisfied souls of India left their country for Europe and America and commenced their nefarious propaganda in those continents. Some found their way into Germany also

and had access to the highest people in the land. They painted the Indian picture there in the blackest of colours. They gave German statesmen to understand that India was on the verge of a rebellion and if only Germany could help them a little she would gladly relieve herself from the heavy and unbearable yoke of British Raj. These German statesmen read reports of the doings of Indian revolutionary societies in India, in America and in Germany and they believed that if Germany were to declare war on England, India would be on her own side or at least would not help England.

Bernhardi, in his book, "Germany and the Next War," published in November, 1911, had indicated the German hope that the Hindu population of Bengal in which a pronounced revolutionary and nationalist tendency showed itself, might unite with the Mahomedans of India and that the co-operation of these elements might create a very grave danger capable of shaking the foundations of England's high position in the world.

On the 6th March, 1914, the "Berliner Tageblatt" published an article on "England's Indian Trouble" depicting a very gloomy situation in India and representing that secret societies flourished and spread and were helped from outside. In California, specially, it was said there appeared to be an organised enterprise for the purpose of providing India with arms and explosives.

But this was not all. Germany was not only pleased to see trouble in India but she helped that trouble. Her

17881



plots will be apparent from the few extracts given below from Chapter VII of the Report of Sedition Committee, 1918, in India of which the President was Mr. Justice Rowlett, Judge of the King's Bench Division of His Majesty's High Court of Justice in England.

"108. According to the case disclosed by the persecution in a State Trial which opened in San Francisco on the 22nd November, 1917, Hardayal (an Indian ex-student of the Punjab University) had planned a campaign in America prior to 1911 with German agents and Indian revolutionaries in Europe and in pursuance of the scheme founded the *Ghadr* Revolutionary party in California, spreading throughout California, Oregon and Washington the German doctrine that the Fatherland would strike England.

109. In September, 1914, a young Tamil named Chempakaraman Pillai, President of a body in Zurich called the International Pro-India Committee, applied to the German Consul in Zurich to obtain permission for him to publish anti-British literature in Germany. In October, 1914, he left Zurich to work under the German Foreign Office in Berlin. He established there the "Indian National Party" attached to the German General Staff. It included among its members Hardayal, the founder of the *Ghadr*, Taraknath Das, Barkatulla, Chandra K. Chakrabarti and Heramba Lal Gupta (two of the accused in the German-Indian conspiracy trial in San Francisco).

The Germans appear to have employed the members of the Indian party at first chiefly in the production of anti-British literature, which was, as far as possible, disseminated in all regions where it might be expected to do injury to Great Britain.

At a later stage they were engaged in other duties. Barkatulla was detailed to direct a campaign to win Indian prisoners of war captured by the Germans from the British ranks from their allegiance. Pillai was at one time trusted with a Berlin Foreign Office code, which he made over in Amsterdam in 1915 to an agent who was leaving for Bangkok *via* America to start a printing plant and publish war news to be smuggled over the the Siamese-Burmese frontier. Heramba Lal Gupta was for a time Indian agent of Germany in America and arranged with Boehm, of whom more will be said, that he should go to Siam and train men for an attack on Burma. Gupta was succeeded as German agent in America by Chakrabarti under the following letter of the Berlin Foreign Office:—

*Berlin, February 4th, 1916.*

THE GERMAN EMBASSY, WASH.

In future all Indian affairs are to be exclusively handled by the Committee to be formed by Dr. Chakravarty. Birendra Sarkar and Heramba Lal Gupta, which latter person has meantime been expelled from

Japan, thus cease to be independent representatives of the Indian Independence Committee existing here.

(Sd). ZIMMERMAN.

110. The German General Staff had definite schemes aimed directly against India. It is with such schemes, in so far as they depended on co-operation with the non-Mahomedans population of India that this chapter is chiefly concerned.

The scheme which depended on Moslem disaffection was directed against the North-Western Frontier, but the other schemes, which relied upon co-operation with the *Ghadr* party of San Francisco and the Bengali revolutionaries, centred in Bangkok and Batavia. The Bangkok scheme depended chiefly on returned Sikhs of the *Ghadr* party, the Batavian scheme upon the Bengalis. Both the schemes were under the general direction of the Consul-General for Germany in Shanghai acting under orders from the German Embassy at Washington."

There were numerous other plots which Germany and her agents stirred up in India. She thought that thereby India will not only leave company with England but that she herself might be able to conquer India. At least she gave her people to understand the same. The following is an interesting description, extracted from a brochure the author of which is said to be Herr August Theyssen, a relative of the well-known German

millionaire, coal and iron master, of how Kaiser deceived the German millionairs to subscribe magnificently to the war funds.

"I was personally promised a free grant of 30,000 acres in Australia and a loan from the Deutsche Bank of 750,000 dollars (£ 150,000), at 3 per cent. to enable me to develop my business in Australia. Several other firms were promised special trading facilities in India, which was to be conquered by Germany—be it noted by the end of 1915. A syndicate was formed for the exploitation of Canada. This syndicate consisted of the heads of 12 firms, and the working capital was fixed at 100,000,000 dollars (£ 20,000,000), half of which was to be found by the German Government.

These promises were not vaguely given. They were made definitely by Herr von Bethmann Hollweg on behalf of the Emperor to gatherings of business men and in many cases to manufacturers. I have mentioned the promise of a grant of 30,000 acres in Australia made me. Promises of a similar kind were made to, at least, 30 other persons at special interviews with the Chancellor and particulars of these promises were entered in a book at the Trade Department.

But not only were these promises made by the Chancellor, they were confirmed by the Emperor, who on three occasions addressed large private gatherings of business men in Berlin, Munich and Cassel in 1912 and 1913. I was at one of these gatherings. The

Emperor's speech was one of the most flowery orations I have heard. The Emperor was particularly enthusiastic over the hopes for German conquest of India.

'India,' he said 'is occupied by the British; it is in a way governed by the British: but it is, by no means, completely governed by them. We shall not merely occupy India, we shall conquer it; and the vast revenues that the British allow to be taken by Indian princes will, after our conquest, flow in a golden stream into the Fatherland. In all the richest lands of the earth the German flag will fly over every other flag.'

But this is what has happened in reality. In December of 1916 the Chancellor Herr von Bethmann Hollweg began to have interviews once more with business men. The purport of these interviews again was to get more money from them. Guarantees were asked from 78 business men in Germany, including myself, that they would, between them, undertake to subscribe a billion dollars (£ 200,000,000) to the next War Loan. I was personally asked to guarantee a subscription of one million dollars (£20,000). I declined to give this guarantee, so did others. I was then favoured with a private interview with Herr von Bethmann Hollweg's private secretary who told me that if I declined to give the guarantee I would lose the contract I had with the War Office. But not only that. I was threatened with the practical ruin of my business if I did not give the guarantee. I described this demand as blackmail of

the worst sort and refused to guarantee a mark to the War Loan. Two months later I lost my contract and the greater part of my business has been taken over at a figure that means confiscation. Moreover, I am not to get paid until after the war, but am to receive 4 per cent. on the purchase price.

The Foreign Trade Department sent out a circular last March which said:—

‘It will be wise for employers who have foreign trade interests to employ agents in foreign countries who can pass themselves off as being of French or British birth. German agents and travellers will probably, for some time after the war, have difficulty in doing business, not only in enemy countries but in neutral countries.’ So this is the prospect we are faced with after the war. The meaning of this circular in plain language is this.—So loathed and hated have Germans become outside their own country that no one will want to have any personal dealings with them after the war. Can any German to whom such prospects are held out by the Emperor fail to see that he has been bamboozled, humbugged, and fooled into supporting a war from which the utmost we can hope to gain is to come out of it without national bankruptcy.’



### CHAPTER III.

---

## Why India Helped Great Britain.

But the German plots, schemes and intrigues in India and elsewhere to create disloyalty among His Majesty's Indian subjects only showed that Germany was very ignorant of the real situation in India. The stray and far-between examples of bombs and murders, dacoities and riots, which were the actions of demented individuals served only to cement India with England all the more strongly. The heart of India was sound to the core. How could it be otherwise? India had seen better days no doubt but the fact has unfortunately to be admitted that during the 16th and 17th centuries when various European nations fought with and against each other and struggled for supremacy in India the country was in a very unsettled state. The Moghul Empire had already shaken to its foundations. Hindus, specially Mahrattas in western India, were again active and striving to bring about the downfall of the Mahomedans wherever they wielded power. The rulers of Indian Native States had their own differences, quarrels and ambitions. That was a time when there was no peace, no order, no good government in the country. Might was right everywhere. Persons and properties were not safe from external dangers. The

picture is not at all exaggerated. Even to-day we find certain sad relics of those times in our society. To illustrate; why do some people prefer to bury their gold and silver underground rather than to use it freely? Why do people prefer to invest their savings in immovable property? There are many other customs and traditions in our modern society which remind us constantly of the sad unsettled days of pre-British India. Had not the British come to India one cannot say what would have been the fate of the country. Some might say that those times would have passed away and been replaced by better times of Hindu rule, or Mahomedan rule or a combined rule when peace, order and contentment would have been restored. But a historian would not come to such a wrong conclusion. It is rightly believed by India that at that time the British proved a Godsend to her. The supremacy of any other European Power in India would have proved a blessing at the time, but the final success of Great Britain was surely the best and the greatest blessing. The advantages which India has derived from her connection with England are many. Universal peace and undisturbed pursuit of one's occupation being not the smallest of them. It is not to be inferred that England has conferred these boons with any philanthropic motives. The advantages have, in fact, been mutual; perhaps they have been greater in the case of England than in that of India. What is British Empire minus India? It is India that has made



her the greatest power in the world. It is India that has made her the richest nation in the world. It is India that has made her the envy of Europe, the whole world, in fact. But the ancient Rishis and Prophets of India have taught us not to remember the good that we do to others but to be grateful for even the slightest advantage that we derive from them. India is grateful to Great Britain for what the latter has done for her. But gratitude is not thankfulness for past favours alone but also an expectation for the favours to come. Do we not expect favours from Great Britain ? 17881

There are people who object to the use of the word 'favour' in such a connection as this. They assert that we have been deprived of certain of our inherent rights and if those rights are to be restored to us, that is only justice and no favour. But is not even justice a favour when the people from whom we demand that justice are in a position to refuse or, at least, delay the same ? We are to-day not what we ought to be; we aspire for higher ideals and those ideals can be realised only if our connection with Great Britain remains in tact. Not only that, with the British connection remaining in tact, we shall be self governing at no distant date, but we shall enjoy advantages which our connection with no other power could have allowed us to enjoy. These and similar other arguments led India to cast her lot with England in the present war. But these were all, so to say, selfish reasons. Had India been self

governing, even an independent nation to-day, there can scarcely be any doubt that she would have cast her lot with Great Britain. Why did Great Britain go into the war? Not with the object of territorial aggrandisement as Germany did as her Empire, to-day, is the vastest in the world and she does not covet to expand it at the expense of others; not with the object of expanding her trade and commerce as it is already second to none other's in the world. Her people are industrious, hard working, intelligent and inventive, her resources in raw materials and in motive powers are also unlimited. She has colonies where she can send her superfluous population. She went to war not for any selfish interests but to help and protect the interests of other smaller nationalities and to fulfil the friendly obligations with other nations in honor. France was involved in the war because of her obligations of honor under a definite alliance with Russia. Of course, Great Britain was not a party to the Franco-Russian Alliance but she had many years of long standing friendship with France. That friendship entailed obligations which could not be ignored. Said Sir Edward Gray in the course of an important statement he made in the House of Commons on the day previous to the declaration of war between England and Germany. "My own feeling is if a foreign fleet, engaged in a war which France had not sought and in which she was not the aggressor, came down

the English Channel and bombarded and battered the undefended coasts of France we could not stand aside (loud and prolonged cheers), with the thing going on practically within sight of our eyes, our arms folded locking on dispassionately, doing nothing, and I believe that to be the feeling in this country, (Loud Cheers)."

But this was not all. There was a more serious consideration, the question of the neutrality of Belgium. The governing factor with regard to Belgium was the Treaty of 1839 and in 1870 Bismark gave an assurance regarding the neutrality of Belgium which was a valuable recognition on Germany's part of the sacredness of Treaty rights. The Treaty was an old treaty, no doubt, but Honor was as strong and as sacred in 1914 as it was in 1839 and 1870. It has been stated in a previous chapter that when mobilisation was beginning, Great Britain telegraphed to Paris and Berlin saying that it was essential to know whether the French and the German governments were prepared to undertake an engagement in respect to the neutrality of Belgium. "The French Government had replied that they were resolved to respect that neutrality and that it would only be in the event of some other Powers violating it that France might find herself under the necessity to act otherwise. Germany had given an evasive reply as to give a definite reply was to disclose a part of their plan of campaign. Great Britain had telegraphed to Brussels also and the Belgian Foreign Minister had replied that Belgium

would do her utmost to maintain her neutrality. He added that the Belgian Government believed that they were in a position to defend the neutrality of their country in case of the violation thereof. Then an ultimatum was given to Belgium by Germany the object of which was to offer to Belgium friendly relations on condition that she facilitated the passage of German troops through Belgium. Great Britain was also asked by Germany as to whether, if Belgian integrity was guaranteed on the conclusion of war she (Great Britain) would be content to which a reply was sent that Great Britain could not bargain away whatever interests and obligations she had in Belgian neutrality. Then, King George had received the following pathetic telegraphic appeal from the King of Belgium.

"Remembering numerous proofs of Your Majesty's friendship and that of your predecessor and the friendly attitude of Great Britain in 1870 and the proof of friendship which she has just given us, I make a supreme appeal to the diplomatic intervention of Your Majesty's Government to safeguard the integrity of Belgium."

Great Britain was moved by this appeal. Besides, she argued that if, in the war, the neutrality of one the smaller countries is violated, if troops of one of the combatants violates its neutrality and no action is taken to resent it, at the end of the war its independence will be gone. If the independence of Belgium was gone,

the independence of Holland followed suit. If England ran away from those obligations of honour and interests as regards Belgium, her respect as a great nation, who loves honor and liberty above everything else, will be lost.

These were the reasons which led England into the war, viz., to fulfil obligations of honor and not to treat them as scraps of paper; to protect the interests of smaller nationalities against the aggressive attitude of selfish, self-aggrandising powers; to maintain their independence and integrity, whatever the sacrifice and cost to herself. These reasons could not but appeal to the world and to India in particular. England entered the war with such noble intentions for the maintenance of liberty of others, herself being truly described as the 'Freedom's last stronghold,' 'Freedom's keep.' Just twenty-five years ago, in the spring of 1894, a great European war, such as the one just ended seemed to be impending and Allan Hume, who has been rightly described as the Father of the Indian National Congress, in bidding farewell to India, addressed stirring words of exhortation to a great public meeting assembled in his honor at Bombay. If unhappily such a war broke out and England was involved he adjointed the Indian people to give united and ungrudging support to the British people "who, with all their defects, were a noble nation that has ever sounded the advance to all the listening peoples of the world along the paths of freedom—the

nation to which you owe most of what you now most highly prize." Indians should, he said, "rally as one man to the side of those little isles which have been justly designated 'Freedom's last stronghold, Freedom's keep.'" "Yes," Mr. Hume continued, "in the nobler sense of the words, a great war will be India's opportunity—opportunity for proving that in period of peace she clamours, at times somewhat angrily, for equal civil rights, in the hour of war she is ever ready and anxious to accept equal military risks."

These words were too true, uttered as they were by a true citizen of free England and one of the best and most sincere friends of India. India argued that the present European war was a godsend opportunity for her, not only, as Mr. Hume said, to show her readiness and anxiety to accept equal military risks but as a sequel to the acceptance of these equal military risks she would advance her political position materially and substantially. In spite of the numerous advantages she derived from her connection with Great Britain, India was very far from being satisfied with her political condition. Like the people of any other country Indians are also human beings. They are desirous to maintain the British connection not from any charitable or philanthropic motive but they desire it because of the royal and parliamentary pledges. They desire this connection for the reason that it will, in course of time, become a fair partnership

beneficial to both parties, that it will some day represent brotherhood, not subjection and exploitation.

From the very beginning India regarded the war as a struggle between liberty and despotism, a struggle for the rights of small nations and for the right of all people to rule their own destinies. It was realised from the speeches and actions of responsible British statesmen that Britain was fighting on the side of liberty and that she could not deny to the people of India that for which she herself fought in Europe. To use the happy phraseology of the Right Hon'ble E. S. Montagu, Secretary of State for India, a line cannot be drawn somewhere in the Indian Ocean so that it could be said, with reference to the principle of self determination for every nation and every state, thus far and no further. With these thoughts for her future India could not but cast her lot with Great Britain in this titanic struggle and she was not wrong in her calculations as even during the war some of her ambitions had begun to materialise as will be shown in a subsequent chapter.



## CHAPTER IV.

---

# The First Wave of Enthusiasm in India.

*For the first time in the history of that great continent (India) every class and community became articulate and the voice of the 300 millions lifted as one. Discontent, it seemed, had only been a phase of "His Majesty's opposition"—there as here. In the face of stern reality doctrinaire politics went to the wall. The loyal Indian became more loyal; unsought he showed his loyalty and devotion without stint. The discontented Indian took thought. The unthinking masses stood by the order of things. The military races were filled with a great hope. It seemed that time had come at last when half the manhood of India might be called upon to unsheath the sword.*

TIMES HISTORY OF THE WAR.

When, on the 5th of August, 1914, the news of Britain's declaration of war against Germany was flashed across the wires to this country, there was a wave of enthusiasm and loyalty from one end of India to another which, even at that hour, sent a thrill of pride to the British nation. It has been narrated in a previous chapter that Germany was almost sure of an Indian revolution in the event of England going



to war. Even, in England herself, people were neither few nor far between who shook their heads when India's loyalty was mentioned. But the spontaneous offers of money and men from Indian princes and people removed, as if by magic, all their doubts and hesitation.

The ruling chiefs vied with each other as to who comes forward with the greatest offer of help to his sovereign lord, the king. The people, unasked, showed their willingness to render every help to the Empire of whose importance they had never a doubt. Within a few days of the declaration of war H. E. the Viceroy's and Governors' and Lieutenant-Governors' and other provincial rulers' offices were literally inundated with telegrams and messages of offers of help from every quarter. Huge demonstrations were held in almost every important town of the country wherein the people, led by their leaders, gave vent to their feelings of deep loyalty to the British Throne and expressed their sincere desire to sacrifice every thing dear to them simply to help Great Britain in war. H. H. the Nizam of Hyderabad, the foremost ruling Chief of India wired as follows to H. E. Lord Hardinge.

"Your Excellency is aware that the whole resources of my state are at the disposal of the British Government and it is a pride to me that one of my regiments has been accepted and is now under orders of foreign service. In 1887, my revered father offered to Her

Imperial Majesty, Queen Victoria, the sum of Rs. 60 lakhs when danger merely threatened the borders of the Indian Empire. I should be untrue alike to the promptings of my own heart and to the traditions of my house if I offered less to His Imperial Majesty, King George V, in this just and momentous war.

H. H. the Maharaja of Mysore wrote:—

“ This is a time I feel at which the Feudatory states and all subjects of the British Empire should stand shoulder to shoulder for her defence and I desire to assure Your Excellency in all sincerity of the devotion and loyalty of my people and our readiness to make every sacrifice to protect our common interests..... My people and myself will cheerfully respond to any sacrifice demanded of us in such a crisis and are prepared to bear our share in the cost of war.”

His Highness, with this letter, offered Rs. 50 lakhs towards the Indian War Fund.

His Highness the Maharaja of Kashmir making an appeal to his officers and subjects to aid the Imperial Indian Relief Fund spoke thus:—

“ Our life, liberty, freedom of conscience and all that we possess is the gift of our benign government and our destinies are indissolubly bound up with the maintenance of the British Rule. We must, therefore, all pray for the victory and glory of the British arms. I call upon every subject of mine Hindu,

Mahomedan, Christian or professing any other religion to offer, according to his own religion, prayers to Almighty that He may, in his inexhaustible goodness and power, grant His blessings upon the British and Indian soldiers, guide them in the war and lead them to speedy victory."

The speeches made by the leaders of public opinion at the demonstrations held everywhere in the country were quite worthy of them, their country and the occasion. Mr. Dadabhai Naoroji, the greatest Indian of his time in his letter addressed to the public only a week after the outbreak of the war said :—

"I have all my life been more of a critic than a simple praiser of the British rule in India and I have not hesitated to say some hard things at times. I can, therefore, speak with most perfect candour and sincerity what the British character is, what the civilisation of the world owes to the British people for benefits in the past as well as for benefits to come. Yes, I have not the least doubt in my mind that every individual of the vast mass of humanity in India will have but one desire in his heart viz, to support to the best of his ability and power the British people in their glorious struggle for justice, liberty, honor and true human greatness and happiness.

The Princes and the peoples of India have made already spontaneous efforts and until the victorious end of this struggle no other thought than that

of supporting whole-heartedly the British nation should enter the mind of British India."

Sir Phirozshah Mehta at a public meeting at Bombay said on the same occasion :—

" At this juncture of supreme gravity we have met together here to-day in the public hall, men of different races and religions, of different creeds and communities, English and Hindu, Parsi and Musalman, to proclaim with one heart, one soul and one mind that these differences distinguish but do not divide us and that in the presence of this solemn situation we are merged in one general and universal denomination, the proud denomination of loyal and devoted subjects of the British Crown (loud and prolonged cheers). As such we are met together to lay at the feet of our august Sovereign, our beloved King-Emperor, our unswerving fealty, our unshaken allegiance and our enthusiastic homage.

Ladies and gentlemen, often enough have we met in this historic hall to speak of our rights, our charters and our privileges. At this solemn moment we can only remember that we owe sacred duties and holy obligations to that British rule under whose auspices the lofty destinies of this great and magnificent land are being moulded for over a century and under whose wise and prudent and righteous statesmanship, the welfare, happiness and prosperity of the country are being incessantly promoted."

Dr. S. Subramania Iyer, as president of the loyal demonstration in Madras on August 21, said.

“ As we know, the war is one which effects the safety of the Empire to which we belong and is thus such as it were touching the person of every man, woman and child in India. Moreover it is not a struggle prompted by motives of aggrandisement but has been provoked by the flagrant breach of solemn engagements by a power which has, for some years, been a constant menace to the peace of Europe and a great part of the world. No wonder, therefore, that our ruling chiefs, Maharajas and Rajas are vying with each other in proclaiming their readiness to stand by and support their Sovereign, their Liege Lord and their personal friend. And we, the people, should not, in our turn, lag behind in our duty.

I am sure I am but giving audible expression to the wishes of the most thoughtful and the most devoted of His Majesty's Indian subjects when they say that they will consider nothing a greater privilege than to be allowed to serve their sovereign as volunteers. They will hold it an honour superior to that of a seat in the Executive Councils and even in the Council of the Secretary of State.”

The Hon'ble Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya, the most respected leader of the United Provinces of Agra and Oudh in a speech at Allahabad, said.

"The destinies of our dear country are linked closely with the destinies of Great Britain. Any reverse to Britain means a serious menace to India. . . . I do not hesitate to say that I am loyal to the British Throne because I love my country.

The Hon'ble Mr. Mazhar-ul Haque, in an address to the Patna Muslims, said :—

"We are Musalmans and we are Indians and we have to perform our duty in this double capacity. I am happy to believe that these two interests do not clash but are entirely identical.

Our motherland is at war with Austria and Germany and it is our bounden duty to rally to a man and stand by the side of our gracious Sovereign."

Similar extracts from many other speeches can be quoted.

His Majesty the King Emperor in his gracious message read by His Excellency Lord Hardinge before the Indian Legislative Council on September, 8, acknowledged the outburst of loyalty in the following words.

"Among the many incidents that have marked the unanimous uprising of the populations of my Empire in defence of its unity and integrity, nothing has moved me more than the passionate devotion to my Throne expressed both by my Indian and English subjects and by the Feudatory Princes and ruling chiefs of India and their prodigious offers of their lives and

their resources in the cause of the Realm. Their one-voiced demand to be foremost in conflict has touched my heart and has inspired, to the highest issues, the love and devotion which, as I well know, have ever linked my Indian subjects and myself. I recall to mind India's gracious message to the British nation of good will and fellowship which greeted my return in February, 1912, after the solemn ceremony of my Coronation Durbar at Delhi and I find, in this hour of trial, a full harvest and a noble fulfilment of the assurance given by you that the destinies of Great Britain and India are indissolubly linked."

This gracious acknowledgement couched in such sweet language, by His Imperial Majesty the King Emperor, coupled with the following equally inspiring words of His Excellency Lord Hardinge spoken in delivering the Royal message still heightened the enthusiasm in India for rendering every possible assistance to the British Empire. Lord Hardinge said :—

"The countless meetings to express loyalty held throughout India and the warm response of the people to my appeal for funds for the relief of distress in India during the war have filled me with satisfaction and have confirmed my first impression that, in this war, the government would be supported by the determination, courage and endurance of the whole country. If it was, moreover, with confidence and pride that I was able to offer to His Majesty the

finest and largest military force of British and Indian troops for service in Europe that has ever left the shores of India I am confident that the honour of this land and of the British Empire may be safely entrusted to our brave soldiers and that they will acquit themselves nobly and ever maintain their high traditions of military chivalry and courage."

It was, at this very time, that a non-official member of the Indian Legislative Council moved the resolution about the expenses of the Indian Expeditionary Force the story of which is related at the proper place. How was this outburst of loyalty and devotion to the Britain's cause was appreciated in England, let an Englishman speak.

The following extracts are taken from an excellent article contributed by Mr. Arthur L. Salmon to the pages of the "Country Life" (England).

"'We may have our differences with government and what people have not? but in the presence of a common enemy, be it Germany or any other power, we sink our differences, we forget our little quarrels and close our ranks and offer all that we possess in defence of the Great Empire to which we are all so proud to belong and with which the future prosperity and advancement of our people are bound up.' These were the words of an Indian newspaper, glorious words nobly backed by the peoples' action. 'We will show the enemy,' said another native journal, 'that



Britain does not stand alone in this conflict which has been thrust upon her but that the vast people of an Empire on which the sun never sets stand behind her like one man ready to place at her disposal, the last gun, the last man and the last penny they possess' ! There has been nothing finer in history than utterances like these ; they bring a thrill to the heart and perhaps a dimness to the eye ; they stir us with a longing that we may be indeed worthy of such devotion."

"India, thought the Germans, was to be our weakness and India was to be their prize. India and South Africa abroad, Ireland at home, were to be weak joints in our armour, they were to be our peril and our defeat. It is the doom of hatred that it can only see with distorted vision. Germany saw wrongly and read our fate in terms that it can only see with distorted vision ; Germany saw wrongly and read our fate in terms of his own shallow perception. What Ireland and Africa have done we know ; they have been our strength, instead of a cause of stumbling ; but perhaps we have not sufficiently appreciated and appraised the wonderful outburst of India's loyalty, one of the grand things to set against the misery and cost of this terrible struggle. 'What orders from His Majesty for me and my troops ?' was the immediate message from one brave Maharaja and it was in this spirit that India met the call. What orders ? What

can we do? How many men shall we send? What treasure shall we give? Britain replied that she wanted India's help and India was proud to be wanted. She sent many of the finest men of her finest races—men of an immemorial aristocracy beside which Norman blood looks *parvenu*.

For the first time' said Mr. Bhupendra Nath Basu, 'we feel that we are truly the equal subjects of the King' because for the first time they were permitted to fight side by side with the British Troops against a European enemy. In any war, even of aggression Indians would have been ready to help us but in this they realised the consecration of a high purpose and all that was best in the public opinion of India, entirely appreciated our objects, in spite of Germany's long and insidious attempts to poison the native mind. Germany had been posing as the protector of Islam. 'Heaven forbid' exclaimed H. H. the Aga Khan, the leading moslem potentate of India, 'that Islam should have such an immoral protector. Shortly after the outbreak of war it was announced in the House of Lords that nearly 700 rulers of Native States had volunteered assistance, personal or other and the offer of many princes and nobles was immediately accepted. There had to be selection, of course, and there were some heart burnings on the part of those whose services were not promptly taken. Sir Pratap

Singh, Regent of Jodhpur, would not be denied, though he had passed his seventieth year and he went to the front accompanied by his great nephew, the Maharaja, a boy of sixteen. A hospitalship was provided, chiefly at the cost of Maharaja of Gwalior and the Begum of Bhopal; the Maharaja of Rewa offered troops, treasure, even his personal jewellery if desired; the Gaekwar of Baroda and the Maharaja of Bharatpur placed the entire resources of their estates (states) at the Government's service. The Aga Khan himself offered to serve as private in any regiment of the Indian Army. Those who had no troops ready hastened to enlist their followers. It was not long before 70,000 troops were in movement and thousands of horses; what the numbers are to-day cannot be said, we must accept the reticence of the authorities without demur. Enough is known to prove that the history of the world can show no parallel to the enthusiastic loyalty and patriotism of these our Indian fellow subjects."

When the troopships arrived at Marseilles in days when the war was still comparatively young, the world was given an object lesson never to be forgotten of what can be accomplished by an appeal to man's highest. The land that was to have broken forth into revolution far more sweeping and deadly than the mutiny of 1857, instead of revolt was giving the best she had to offer. To the slanders and lyings and

enemy tongues this was the answer. Britain because she was fighting justly, was being vindicated by the enthusiastic assent of her sons from all corners of the Empire, and the underlying unity of the British Peace was proving itself nobly effective in stress of war. These men were coming from the banks of Ganges and Indus, from the plains and the hills, from quiet villages among the ricefields, from the crowded townships of Mosque and Bazar—they were coming to conditions that were entirely strange to them, to a climate that would test their endurance to the uttermost and to a species of warfare completely alien to their own ideas and capabilities. Many were coming still bound by ties of caste and by dietary rigors. What they suffered and how bravely, we know in part. Perhaps we shall never fully know the heroic record. Some glimpses and side-lights of the glory have shone forth to us."

It is not necessary to add here that as the future pages will clearly demonstrate, that the spirit of enthusiastic loyalty displayed in the early months of the war was not only not allowed to abate even by a slightest degree but it was maintained throughout the war with still keener enthusiasm whenever special occasions arose.



## CHAPTER V.

### India's Financial Contribution.

It is impossible to calculate exactly in pounds, shillings and pence the enormous services rendered by India to the British Empire during the war. The extent to which the princes and the people of India shared the financial burden of the war is simply unexplainable. As soon as the war broke out, the princes and the people of India offered, as one man, to place their entire resources at the disposal of the King Emperor for war purposes. The munificent gifts of ruling princes like H. E. H. the Nizam of Hyderabad, Their Highnesses the Maharajas of Mysore, Gwalior, Patiala, Bikaner, Jodhpur, Kashmir and others have drawn magnificent encomiums from responsible persons all the world over. The Maharaja of Mysore wrote to Lord Hardinge on the 28th August:—

“ My people and myself will cheerfully respond to any sacrifices demanded of us in such a crisis and are prepared to bear our share in the cost of the war. My troops are ready and should money be required I hereby place at Your Excellency's disposal a sum of Rs. 50 lakhs as my contribution towards the cost of the Indian War Fund.”

H. H. the Nizam of Hyderabad similarly wrote to the Viceroy on the same occasion:—

“Your Excellency is aware that the whole resources of my state are at the disposal of the British Government

and it is a pride to me that one of my regiments has been accepted and is now under orders for foreign service. But this is not enough. In 1887, my revered father offered to Her Imperial Majesty, Queen Victoria, the sum of Rs. 60 lakhs when danger merely threatened the borders of the Indian Empire. I should be untrue alike to the promptings of my own heart and to the traditions of my house if I offered less to His Imperial Majesty, King George V, in this just and momentous war."

Similar offers were made by other ruling chiefs of India and it is needless to say that most of them were gratefully accepted by H. E. the Viceroy. A perusal of the statement, printed elsewhere in the book, made by Mr. C. H. Roberts in the House of Commons on the 9th September, 1914, will send a thrill of pleasant astonishment into the mind of the reader.

But these were the fruits of only the first enthusiasm of war. How the princes have been able to maintain this high standard of their services throughout the war is only a matter of history and when the official history of the war comes to be written, and these services are mentioned there in detail, the British will find how India helped her to emerge triumphantly out of a very grave situation.

The contributions of about every ruling chief deserve special mention, but such a procedure will make this volume a very cumbrous one. The financial assistance rendered by H. E. H. the Nizam and H. H. the

Maharaja Scindhia of Gwalior is mentioned only to serve as an illustration.

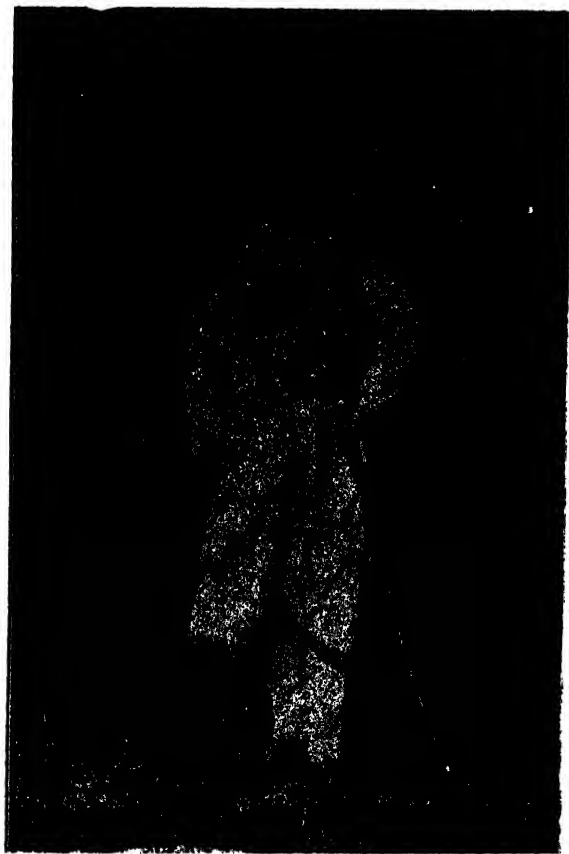
The gifts of H. E. H. the Nizam of Hyderabad alone amount to £ 1227966 as under:—

	Rs.	or	£
Towards the payment of war charges of the 20th Deccan Horse and the First Imperial Service Cavalry ...	15,300,000	1,02,0000	
Prince of Wales Relief Fund ...	100,000	6,666	
Imperial Indian Relief Fund ...	100,000	6,666	
To the Admiralty in aid of ...			
anti-submarine campaign ...	1,500,000	100,000	
Our Day collection for the ...			
Red Cross ...	100,000	6,666	
Special donation towards ...			
the prosecution of the war ...	1,500,000	100,000	
To Their Majesties for the relief of sufferers from the war on the occasion of their Silver Wedding ...	375,000	25,000	
Other subscriptions ...	134,000	9,000	
Share of expenditure of hospital-ship 'Loyalty' maintained by the Princes of India ...	200,000	13,333	

Take, then, the contributions of H. H. the Maharaja Scindhia of Gwalior than whom, perhaps, no ruling prince in India has made more various and more munificent contributions. To mention only a few for







*In this country we may differ in politics, we may differ in religion, we may differ in one or more details but as regards one matter there is, I believe, no difference of opinion, that matter is our resolution to perpetuate the Empire.*

H. H. MAHARAJA SCINDHIA OF GWALIOR.

the first 2½ years alone, His Highness gave to the Government of India a loan of Rs. 50 lakhs free of interest and offered to postpone the payment by the latter of treaty payments amounting, in December, 1914, to Rs. 19 lakhs. His Highness and his people offered the hospitalship 'Loyalty,' two regiments of infantry consisting of four double companies each, six squadrons of cavalry for garrison duty at Quetta and Bannu, horses worth Rs. 157,050, Sowars with officers and horses for Egypt and Europe, £30,000 Red Cross gift for Indian and British troops, a motor ambulance fleet costing £25,000, nine aeroplanes costing £22,500, motor transport costing £23,000, a convalescent home at Nairobi (initial cost, about £12,000, and monthly recurring expenditure, about £1,000), £30,000 to the Prince of Wales Fund, Rs. 321,593 to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund, etc., etc.

As to British India. India has been subjected to adverse criticism from certain interested or unknowing quarters that she has not contributed enough. But those who have followed the trend of events in the country have not the slightest doubt that India's financial contribution has been much more than it was expected. For the information of those who intentionally or unintentionally minimise the services of India, a few facts are stated below.

These critics may be reminded that section 22 of the Government of India Act forbids the application

of the revenues of India to defraying the expenses of any military operations carried on beyond our external frontiers otherwise than for preventing or repelling actual invasion or under some other sudden or urgent necessity and that the specific consent of both Houses of Parliament is requisite to set these provisions aside. As the law stands, the whole cost of the Expeditionary Forces supplied from India was, therefore, primarily debitable to His Majesty's Government as had been the case, for example, in regard to troops India lent for operations in South Africa during the Boer War and in China about the same time. But it was a non-official member of the Imperial Legislative Council, Hon'ble Sir Gangadhar Chitnawis who moved a resolution in the Indian Legislative Council at the commencement of the war to the effect that the people of India, in addition to the military assistance then being afforded by India to the Empire, would wish to share in the heavy financial burden imposed by the war on the United Kingdom and requesting the Government of India to take this view into consideration and thus to demonstrate the unity of India with the Empire. The resolution was seconded by another non-official member, the Hon'ble the Raja of Mahmudabad, a representative of the Indian Musalman community. In support of the resolution Sir Gangadhar made a speech a few extracts out of which may be reproduced here with advantage.

ordinary charges of any troops so despatched as well as the ordinary charge of any vessels belonging to the Government that may be employed in this expedition which would have been charged upon the revenues of India had such troops and vessels remained in that country, or seas adjacent shall continue to be so chargeable, provided that, if it shall be necessary to replace the troops or vessels so withdrawn by other vessels or forces then the expense of raising, maintaining and providing such vessels and forces shall be repaid out of any moneys which may be provided by Parliament for the purposes of the said expedition."

The resolution was unanimously passed. In the House of Lords, Lord Crew moved the same resolution. He referred to the pride which all felt at the despatch of the Indian forces. The motion was carried amid cheers.

This resolution remained in force throughout the war. Consequently His Majesty's Government in England and the Government of India were equally bound to stick and act up to it. The amount of financial assistance in this way was, therefore, not liable to reduction. The resolution meant that although we sent a large number of our best troops out of the country at a time when mere considerations of local safety might have dictated their remaining here we have paid for them just as if they were still employed in India. Sir William Meyer, in his budget speech of 1917-18, stated

that "the gross amount that we shall have thus contributed up to the end of the year may be taken at 19 million pounds" and during the two following years no less than 10 million pounds more have been spent.

"It has," said Sir William Meyer in the same speech, "also to be borne in mind that quite apart from these charges we have had to add to our military expeditions very considerably in connection with the war which has, in particular, rendered it necessary to take special measures for the protection of the North-West Frontier. I need not go into details here but will let the lump figures of military expenditure speak for themselves. The last budget framed under peace conditions, that for 1914-15, assumed a total net military expenditure of 20½ millions which was higher than the outlay for any preceding year subsequent to 1906-07. In 1915-16 the net military expenditure amounted to 22½ millions. In the current year, as I have already explained, it has run up to nearly 25·4 millions while we expect it to amount to close on 26 millions in 1917-18. The bulk of the increased expenditure thus shown is directly attributable to circumstances connected with the war and with the precautionary attitude which further possibilities have forced upon us.

It has also to be remembered that we have been put to very considerable additional expenditure in conjunction with His Majesty's Government by reason of

the political situation in Persia set up by the war. The total additional cost thus thrown upon us may be taken at £1,200,000 from the commencement of the war up to March, 1918.

We have further, as I have already indicated, had to strain our resources very seriously and to impose prejudicial limitations on legitimate trade activities, in order to finance very heavy charges in this country on account of His Majesty's Government while we have relented them a large part of our recoveries by taking up Treasury bills through the Paper Currency and Gold Standard Reserves. In all, as I showed in paragraph 37, we have, since the beginning of the war, put 46½ millions into British war securities of which £35 million represents wholly new investment. And, in 1917-18, we expect that our anticipatory payments for the Home Government will be as heavy as in the current year while we must anticipate a recurrence of the attendant difficulties.

Finally at the cost of cutting down our capital expenditure programme to the quick we have abstained from indenting on the home money market with the intention of leaving it for His Majesty's Government's loan operations. Thus in 1915-16 allowing for the discharge of debt our net borrowings in London amounted only to a sum of £2 million while in the current year we are making no fresh sterling borrowing but are on the contrary reducing £7½ million of

previous debt Nor do we propose to indent on the home market in any way in the coming year."

Could India do more at the time and under the conditions then prevailing? Let Sir William Meyer himself answer.

"The answer is that the situation at that time did not permit it. Our finances had been most gravely dislocated by the war. We were forced not merely by a large decrease in revenue but by a very serious drain on our Post Office Savings Bank deposits which had compelled us to borrow £7 million from the Gold Standard Reserve while the Secretary of State had incurred £7 million of temporary debt in London. In framing the budget of 1915-16 again we were forced by what we thought would be a very heavy deficit and having regard to political and financial considerations Lord Hardinge's Government felt strongly that it was necessary at that time to avoid additional taxation."

But this was not all. In January, 1917, His Excellency Lord Chelmsford addressed a telegram to the Secretary of State from which the following is quoted :—

"I feel and I speak throughout with the cordial and unanimous assent of my colleagues that the time has come for India to place her credit and her taxable capacity at the disposal of His Majesty's Government to be utilised to the farthest extent, which her limited

resources and a just appreciation of the circumstances of her people render practicable, and in such time and manner as His Majesty's Government may deem expedient. We are prepared to borrow in India as a war loan for His Majesty's Government the largest sum which can be raised and to offer for this purpose terms no less liberal than those which have been granted in England. If it should be found that Indian credit can also usefully be employed elsewhere we should gladly assure to its being so employed and in so far as the aggregate funds which India can thus directly borrow for the use of His Majesty's Government constitute a contribution not adequately proportioned to her resources we propose that she should also undertake the service of a portion of the existing British war debt. In this spirit and in the confidence that such an offer will evoke a generous response from the princes and peoples of India we have addressed ourselves to the task of defining practical possibilities."

The telegram went on to indicate that "we were prepared to accept an ultimate total special contribution of £100 million to the war and to put forward proposals for increasing our resources in order to meet the consequent recurring liabilities which may be taken at £6 million a year allowing for the gradual extinction of this debt by a sinking fund."

His Majesty's Government gratefully accepted this magnificent offer of £100 million which amounts to



nearly double our total annual revenue as it stood before the war. It was decided to raise this amount by floating a war loan in India on favourable rates of interest. The Government did well by handing over this sum to His Majesty's Government as a free gift from India for the prosecution of the war. We have to see how the princes and peoples of India discharged their duties and responsibilities in making the loan a success. Sir William Meyer had estimated that the first (1917) war loan would bring not more than £20 million pounds but the actual amount realised greatly surpassed the most sanguine expectations, a particularly encouraging feature being, in the words of Mr. E. M. Cook, I.C.S., Officiating Controller of Currency, the way in which small investors in the mufassil had, for the first time, invested their savings in a Government loan. The main section of the 1917 loan realised about 44 crores of rupees (nearly 30 million sterling) while the number of applications amounted to 77,932. The first war loan remained open for a limited period and in spite of repeated demands from the public for the extension of this period it was closed. The second war loan opened on the auspicious day of His Majesty King George's birth-day in 1918 and it was even a grander success. Let Mr. Cook himself speak of the splendid results of this loan.

"When, however, the time came to start the war loan operations of 1918 considerable misgiving was

felt of a similar success (similar to that of 1917) being attained. The success of the 1917 Loan had been due, in a very large measure, to the propaganda work undertaken both by officials and by a large number of public-spirited non-official workers. Eloquent energetic appeals had been made to the patriotism of the people and much work of persuasion done in the matter of explaining the advantages of investment on this first class security. It was feared, therefore, by many people that further appeals of this nature would become stale by re-iteration, the war loan propaganda would have lost much of its novelty both to the workers and to the people who were to be called upon to respond, and as for the larger investors, either individuals or companies, many of these, especially in Bombay, had, it was thought, already invested in the Loan of 1917 up to the limit of their resources. Altogether it was felt that nothing like the same results could be expected. The actual results, however, belied the pessimism ; it is clear that the force of an appeal which combines patriotism with an attractive investment had been under-estimated while prognostication based on the so-called 'tying up' of money in the 1917 Loan, proved to have overlooked the effect which would be produced on the circulation of money by Government's immense disbursements. The main section of the 1918 Loan has realised nearly 511 crores (about 35 millions sterling) and the number

of applications was no less than 103,282. The Post Office section of the 1917 loan realised  $4\frac{1}{2}$  crores (about 3 million sterling), the number of applications being 82,000 and it is probable that even better results will be obtained through the Post Office section this year. The full significance of these figures will be appreciated by consideration of the fact that previous (*sic*) to the war the largest rupee loan raised in India in recent years was that of 1916 which amounted to  $4\frac{1}{2}$  crores (£3 million), the number of tenderers being only 1,172 and it is perhaps not too much to hope that we have now in existence the germ of a large class of rentiers, the investment of whose savings in public loans should, in future years, be of almost incalculable value in furthering the development of the country."

In concluding his brief report Mr. Cook has liberally acknowledged the effort of a large number of non-official workers many of whom were extremely busy men who could ill afford to spend the time.

In addition to this the contribution of a hundred million sterling meant an annual charge of about 6 million sterling on the tax-payers of India which will have to be paid by them till the loan has been paid back. To meet this liability additional taxation had to be resorted to. The rates of income-tax were enhanced which now run on a graduated scale of from 4 pies to as much as one anna on a rupee. This income-tax has been supplemented by a super-tax or

incomes exceeding Rs. 50,000 a year and is as much as 2½ annas for every rupee of 16 annas which is in excess of an income of Rs. 2½ lakhs a year. The surcharge on railway goods traffic at the rate of one pie a maund on coal and firewood and two pies a maund on other articles is to be paid by the people themselves. Similar other taxes had to be imposed which fell on the shoulders of the rich and the poor alike and meant a great deal of hardship to them. But India willingly bore these hardships simply because by so doing she was helping the British Empire of which she is an indispensable part.

The resolution brought forward by the Finance Member in the Indian Legislative Council in September, 1918, proposing that India should bear a larger share of the cost of the military forces raised or to be raised in this country than she was doing before must needs be mentioned. In this resolution it was proposed that a sum of £45 million be spent in paying the cost of a large proportion of Indian troops during the following three years. During the war the strength of the Indian army was considerably increased. Before the war it was about 1,60,000, in September, 1918, it was 4,90,000, an increase of 3,30,000; of these 2,30,000 represent recruits under training and men at depots who are required to maintain at their present strength the units in the field and to replace wastage in India. The remaining 1,00,000 represent fresh formation. On

June 1st, 1918, India was asked to raise about 5,00,000 additional combatants. The proposal of Sir William Meyer was that out of 4,90,000 men in the Indian army the normal cost of 3,60,000 instead of 1,60,000, as hitherto, should be paid out of the Indian revenues from April 1st, 1918 and that from April 1st, 1919, having regard to the additional recruitment going on, of 1,00,000 more men or of 4,60,000 men. For purposes of calculation it was assumed that the war would continue until 31st March, 1920 and that the year 1920-21 would be a year of gradual demobilization. Needless to say, that even this resolution was passed by the Council. Since the war came to a close before the expiry of the year, 1919, with almost a dramatic suddenness it is yet to be seen whether full effect is given to this resolution or not. In the changed circumstances the country has opined that it should be not (vide the resolutions passed in the Delhi sessions of the Indian National Congress, All India Moslem League and the Indian Industrial Conference).

But India's financial services do not end here. The numerous relief and other funds started in England and in India and even in the Allied countries received a hearty response from the princes and people of India. The Imperial Indian Relief Fund being the most important; the subscriptions to this fund give another unmistakable proof, if one were needed, of the willingness of the well-to-do classes to help their poorer

brethren to tide over the difficulties caused by the war. The total sum received by way of subscription to the central (as distinguished from local and provincial branches which kept to themselves a small percentage of the receipts for meeting the ordinary expenditure) from the date of its inception up to the 31st December, 1918 was above Rs. 1,86,000,00 or £1,240,000.

There were, then, dozens of other funds to which the princes and people of India subscribed freely and liberally. The Prince of Wales Relief Fund, the Belgian Relief Fund, the Our Day Fund, the King and Queen's Silver Wedding Fund are some of them. The amounts subscribed to these various funds were considerable and much more than what was expected. For instance, the Our Day collections brought very nearly a crore of rupees (£6,600,00) whereas the most sanguine estimate of the receipts when the fund was inaugurated was only half of this amount.

The story is yet incomplete. When Russia collapsed and Indian borders were threatened with an enemy invasion, the ruling chiefs and the people of India made special handsome offers to His Majesty for successful prosecution of the war and when, in November, 1918, Germany came down upon her knees and applied for peace, when armistice was signed, lakhs of rupees were spent in India on private and public jublations and preparations are already being made to celebrate the final Peace, whenever it comes, in a

manner worthy of the country and worthy of the triumph which justice has achieved over evil, democracy over autocratic tyranny.

The financial assistance which India has been able to render to the British Empire is to be gauged from various standpoints. The following figures must needs be mentioned before the reader is told anything as to their hugeness. They indicate only a rough estimate but are not very wide of the mark.

	Rs.	or
On account of military expenditure for 5 years of war ...	2,000,000,000	188,888,888
Financial contribution to the British Treasury including the Indian War Loan ...	1,500,000,000	100,000,000
Interest on the war loan and the British war debt a little less than...	200,000,000	18,888,888
Contributions to various war funds and various kinds of war gifts by the princes and the people of India ...	200,000,000	18,888,888
<b>Total</b> ...	<b>3,900,000,000</b>	<b>260,000,000</b>
Add to this the proposed contribution of £15 million ...	6,750,000,000	45,000,000
<b>Total</b> ...	<b>4,575,000,000</b>	<b>305,000,000</b>

This amount was contributed by a country of whose population a large percentage does not know what a full meal means. Out of a total population of 315 millions only about 2,400,000 are assessed to income tax, that is, have incomes of Rs. 1,000 a year or over and only about 40,000 of these, again, have incomes

of over Rs. 5,000. Lord Curzon estimated the average income per capita in India to be Rs. 28 (less than £2) per annum against £45 in England. Although from other calculations it comes only to about Rs. 20 (£1-6 s.) yet, taking even Lord Curzon's estimate to be correct, it requires a huge effort to believe that such a country could contribute such a large amount of financial assistance. The total national income of Great Britain would, at the above rate, come to about £2,100 million and that of India to about £600 million, that is  $3\frac{1}{2}$  times less ; a contribution of £300 million, therefore, means at least a contribution of £1,050 million from the point of view of the relative paying capacity of India and England.

If the financial assistance rendered by India is compared with that of any British Colony, India shall not have to blush. For instance, how many Colonies whose sacrifices are sometimes lauded up to the skies took anything in the British war debt? Instead of making any financial contribution, the self-governing Dominions borrowed from England for their war expenditure. It was stated in the House of Commons in June, 1917, that since the out-break of the war £154 million had been advanced to the Dominions. By quoting these figures there is no intention of discrediting the war efforts of the Colonies; what is meant is only to vindicate India whose services have sometimes been belittled by the unknowing.



Then India had been spending, even before the war, on an army which was on a scale commensurate with war times. The peace time military expenditure of India was £200,000,00 every year while Canada and Australia used to spend only a little more than £1,000,000. Surely India was not 20 times richer than Canada or Australia. The proportion of military expenditure compared to the total expenditure of India was 22 per cent while in Canada it was only 5. In the words of Sir D. E. Wacha, the Government of India maintained an army of war 'in times of piping peace.' Then, India is administratively a debtor country. She has to remit to England about £20 million for interest on her productive debt (Railways and Irrigation Works), leave allowances, pay, pensions, etc. The closing of almost the entire European market to India, the restrictions of imports from Great Britain, the difficulties of sea communications and the exorbitant freights had also paralysed the Indian trade to a great extent and affected the customs revenue and shaken the whole fabric of exchange on which Indian commerce depended. India, again, has neither the powerful banking system nor the wide industrial strength which enabled Canada to come through so well. All these circumstances must be borne in mind when India's financial services are calculated and compared with those of the mother country or of the Dominions.

Then, there was a large expenditure incurred by the

Government of India on behalf of the Imperial Government. The Government of India had undertaken to finance many war services and the export of enormous quantities of wheat, jute, hides and munitions. Up to the end of March, 1918, India had spent on these war services for His Majesty's Government about £1,280,000,00. Not only India provided the money on the spot but she invested in British war securities a very large part of the moneys repaid to her in London and so relented to the Imperial Government much of the debt due to her. Up to the end of 1918 India put £67,000,000 into such securities.



## CHAPTER VI.

---

### India's Services in Men.

According to the Census of 1911, the total population of India is 315, 156, 396 which exceeds that of Europe minus Russia. If we exclude from it about half the number of females and a quarter for children and old men we have still over 70 millions of men of fighting age. And yet Lord Crew in speaking to the House of Commons at the commencement of the war about the utilisation of India's manhood in the war described the Indian recruiting field as being not an inexhaustible reservoir. In making this remark he was correct only in one sense. Very probably he counted simply upon the strength of the then standing army which was about a quarter of a million. He forgot that although certain circumstances, for which India was not wholly to blame, had led to the decay of the ancient warrior of India yet that old military spirit had not totally disappeared from the land. The country which produced a Ramchandra, an Arjuna, a Bhishma, a Dronacharya, a Shivaji, a Rana Partap, a Rana Sanga could not, in spite of a few centuries of inactivity, become devoid of that martial spirit. He forgot that the countrymen of Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh or of Naik Darwan Singh Negi had not yet run out of the blood of that old civilisation which regarded the art of

fighting as a necessary equipment of a citizen. Milton's famous lines.

No thought of flight,  
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
 That argued fear, each on himself relied  
 As only in his arm the moment lay  
 Of victory.

can very well be applicable to an Indian soldier. Lord Curzon was quite correct when he gave utterance in a speech at Hull on September 4, 1914, to the following words.

“ The martial spirit in India was traditional and famous and why, when we want every man we could get, should we refrain from employing them (Indian soldiers) because the sun happened to look upon them and made them dark? They would not fire on Red Cross badge, they would not murder innocent women and children, they would not bombard Christian cathedrals even if to them they were the fanes of an alien faith. The East was sending out a civilised soldiery to save Europe from the modern Huns !”

Even in more recent times India had been a magnificent training ground for many great British soldiers. It was the experience of Wellesley in India that had made him to be chosen at the darkest hour of England's fortunes to go out and take command of British troops in the Peninsula and begin that career of conquest

which ended at Waterloo, the greatest contest in which Britain had been engaged up to the present war.

Thus India, at the time of the commencement of the war, neither lacked in men nor in valour, nor even in the wish to serve the Empire at the crisis. There were certain difficulties, however, none of India's making. The Empire could depend at the time only on the regular army which could send only 70,000 men to France immediately. The continued peace of over a hundred years, the strict operations of the Arms Act and certain other causes had made Indians give up the profession of the sword and take to peaceful avocations. For decades, India had been crying for the repeal or at least a substantial modification of the Arms Act which has emasculated the entire nation to a degree, for the restoration of the right of volunteering for national militia, for the grant of King's Commissions in the Indian army in order to induce the best among her men to embrace the military profession but the cry always proved a cry in the wilderness. Whole provinces nearly as large as Germany itself had been ruled out for military purposes. Large communities who could supply fighting men in tens of thousands were tabooed and this wholesale restriction of the area of recruitment had seriously affected the martial spirit of the people even in those parts of the country which were once noted for their virile population. When the war broke out, the actual situation was

realised. England found herself face to face with rather a tough enemy. Although the requisite number was there in India, the requisite quality and training was lacking. The soldier who had to confront the up-to-date German opponent ought to have been a well trained and most thoroughly equipped man. It was realised that at least 6 months training was necessary to turn a raw recruit into a finished soldier. Delay was the result. Indians, of course, offered their services in millions. The ancient spirit of Hindus and Musalmans revived as soon as they knew that they could serve their king and country in the field of battle. They forgot old sores, they laid aside their grievances, they brushed away their prejudices and with one voice, in the press and on the platform, in the councils and outside them, in the Congress and conferences expressed their desire to fight the king's battles side by side with British and Colonial armies. In fact, it would have been extremely disappointing to them if their prayers had not been granted. There were old prejudices on the other side also and if Lord Hardinge were not at the helm of Indian affairs at the time perhaps the first Expeditionary Force would not have been sent so soon. Never before this war Indian soldiers had taken part in any warfare in Europe. They had been to Cyprus in 1870, to Egypt in 1882. They mingled among the army of all nations at Peking in 1900. But they were never

employed against European soldiers. They were regarded till then as coolies by some of the European nations. Viscount Bryce once related an interesting incident which can well be mentioned here. 'In the China Expedition, in 1900, the Germans, as insolent as they were ignorant, called the Indian soldiers 'coolies.' An Indian chieftain and soldier of the purest Rajput blood never forgot that word 'coolie,' and he and his brother Rajputs were now wiping it out on the battlefield of Northern France.' The question of the employment of Indian troops against European soldiers was seriously thought of for the first time in connection with the Boer war and objections against their employment prevailed on that occasion because England was involved in a war with a petty republic which was bound to collapse ultimately even without the assistance of the Indian soldiers. Of course, India knew that the British Government was at perfect liberty to employ its non-European troops in a European war.<sup>6</sup> There was no restriction imposed by international law. But it was apprehended that the peculiar idea of prestige that had led to the decision not to employ Indian troops on previous occasions might prevail again at this juncture. But this war was on an unprecedentedly colossal scale and it was decided at once by England that Indian troops must be sent to France to check the onrush of the enemy. At the very outset, there-







*I have no hesitation in saying that the valuable offers of military assistance that I have received from the Ruling Chiefs of India and the countless offers of personal service and of material help made to me by both rich and poor in the provinces of British India have touched me deeply and have given me one more proof which I never needed, of what I have long known and never for an instant doubted viz. the deep loyalty and attachment of the Indian people to the King Emperor and the Throne and their readiness to make any sacrifice on their part to further and strengthen the interests of the Empire.*

LORD HARDINGE.

fore, the happy decision to employ a fairly adequate number of Indian and Imperial Service Troops was taken.

No wonder, therefore, that when His Excellency Lord Hardinge announced to the expectant country that an Expeditionary Force was being sent to France and that further troops were to be recruited to replace those that were sent, the announcement was received with a thrill of joy and pride from one end of the country to the other. It was an historic event for India. The war is a great evil but good often cometh out of evil. There is a silver lining even to the darkest cloud. That event was the first happy outcome of the war. India realised for once in the history of her British connection that her soldiery was going to fight on the European battlefield shoulder to shoulder with the best trained British, French and Colonial forces and against a most up-to-date and thoroughly equipped army like that of Germany. The credit for this signal act of wisdom and statesmanship must mainly, though not entirely, be given to Lord Hardinge who was at the head of Indian affairs at the time. There were other personages also whom this credit may reasonably be assigned. The then War Minister, Lord Kitchener, had been our Commander-in-chief only a few years before and who had, therefore, first hand information and experience of the merits of the Indian as well as the Imperial Service Troops. Then, he was

being assisted at the war office by that veteran soldier of the Empire, Lord Roberts whose lifelong connection with and acquaintance of the Indian soldier could not possibly allow him to overlook the question. How wise this decision was is borne ample testimony to by subsequent events.

When the Indian troops landed in France, there was a wave of an unprecedented enthusiasm in that country as well as in England. Reuter reported that "a new page in history was opened when the fleet of transports rounded the point and swung alongside bearing the flower of the King-Emperor's Indian army. The day was gloriously fine and rows of gleaming smiling faces surmounted by puggrees fluttering in the breeze presented an unforgettable picture. The whole city was seething with excitement while the troops disembarked and when the force defiled through the city to the rest camp led by the Sikhs the inhabitants were wild with enthusiasm and delight. It was a moving sight to see the Sikhs and Gurkhas, Punjabis, Baluchis and Princes with bejewelled turbans pass along through the dense masses of cheering spectators; every window, every balcony, and roof thronged. As the troops proceeded they were pelted with flowers while the people on the pavement pressed forward to grasp hands and pin flowers and Tricolors on their tunics. The excitement reached its culmination when the Baluchis passed playing "La Marseillaise." The

pleasure of the troops at their splendid welcome was reflected in their delighted smiles. Underlying a purely friendly welcome was the intense admiration for Indians' bearing, efficiency and equipment. It was literally an Expeditionary Force complete from mule batteries to the last pick and shovel."

The people of France can never forget such a scene and the Indian Expeditionary Force was not only well equipped, well behaved, well trained but on the actual battlefield it proved second to no other force British, French or German. Field Marshal General French whose authority cannot be questioned in matters military wrote in a Despatch :—

"One of the outstanding features of this as of every action fought by the Indian Corps is the stirring record of comradeship in arms which exists between British and Indian soldiers. . . . . The Indian troops had fought with utmost steadfastness and gallantry wherever they have been called upon. . . . . At their own particular request they have taken their turn in the trenches and performed most useful and valuable service."

Mr. E. Ashmede Bartlett wrote the following in the London "Telegraph" about the skill, efficiency and bravery of the Indian troops on the battlefield :—

"The Indian army has more than proved its excellence and its capacity to fight side by side with our regular troops. The soldiers of India are perhaps the

most highly trained in the world. They are nearly all long-service men who know their job thoroughly from A to Z. They are hardy, brave and full of cheerfulness in the field. . . . . Some of their counter attacks have been models of dash and skill. They are, in fact, above all else, good in attack. This is generally the case with high trained troops. The whole Indian army has, in fact, been trained most highly in attack, in those great sweeping forward movements covering a wide stretch of broken country where the men must show their initiation and their native instinct of keeping direction when marching on a particular objective. The life in the trenches, standing for days knee-deep in mud and icy water seeing your parapet continually subsiding and having to be re-built, exposed at all times to the enemy's snipers, his shell fire and constant counter attacks, is enough to try the patience of the most lion-hearted and lion-limbed. . . . . Yet the Indians have faced these conditions without showing signs of demoralisation and have borne their share of the task of holding the line with a courage and endurance worthy of soldiers of any of the European armies engaged."

The following observations of the *Indian* are worth quoting.

"We despatched our Expeditionary Force in August, we possessed reserves which could maintain it at full strength for some time; and we initiated a scheme

which would enable us to supply re-inforcements in great numbers in the following years. But suppose there was a call for more trained troops within the next few months, our organisation gave us no means of meeting it. The call came and the outstanding political fact of the war is that it was India that met it. At the moment of supreme crisis in November it was the presence of an Indian corps in the fighting line which enabled the Allies to beat back the great German effort to gain possession of the French Channel ports, an effort whose success might have carried with it incalculable consequences. Not many weeks before the decision to employ Indian troops on the European battlefield had been hailed with a gratification not unmingled with surprise. It is now apparent that this decision went a very long way to set tolerable limits to the German offensive. Nor does this, by any means, exhaust the services rendered to the Empire by the Indian army during this critical period. It is a matter of some political importance that a small Indian contingent was able to co-operate with the Japanese in the successful operations before Tsingtau, but it was when the German scheme for the embroilment of Turkey was put into execution that the full value of the Indian army became apparent. Indian troops, co-operating with the British Navy, at once undertook the very important operations at the head of the Persian Gulf which have already resulted

in the capture of Basra and have profoundly affected opinion throughout the Middle East. Indian troops are ready to play their part in the defence of the Suez Canal, a clear passage through which is of such vital moment to India herself ; and though the offensive which Indian troops initiated in German East Africa was unfortunately not crowned with success it has had the important effect of rendering adjacent British territory practically immune from attack. Of all the calculations of the Germans none has been more completely set at naught than their belief that their coercion of Turkey would gravely embarrass the British Empire and it is to the Indian army more than to any other force that the ruin of their hopes must be attributed."

A numberless appreciative notices from the British, Indian, French and the Colonial Press might be quoted but that will hardly serve the purposes of this small volume. Mr. Asquith, the Prime Minister, at a great meeting held at the Guildhall on May 19, 1915, in the course of a speech before a public meeting of the citizens of London said about the Indian army.

"What shall I say about the Indian Forces? (cheers). India has put in the field in the several theatres of war, including British troops sent from India a force equivalent to nine complete infantry divisions, with artillery—(cheers) and eight cavalry brigades (renewed cheers) as well as several smaller bodies of

troops aggregating more than an infantry division, in minor and outlying spheres. Putting the same thing in another way India has placed at the disposal of the Empire, for service out of India, twenty-eight regiments of cavalry, British, Indian and Imperial Service and no less than 124 regiments of infantry, British, Indian and Imperial.

Then, again, when we look to the actual achievement of the forces so spontaneously despatched, so liberally provided, so magnificently equipped, the battlefields of France and Flanders bear undying tribute to their bravery and devotion."

His Excellency the Viceroy addressing the Indian Legislative Council on September 8th, 1914, namely, only a month after the declaration of war by England against Germany said :—"it was a source of legitimate pride and satisfaction to India as a whole that we had been in a position to send a military force of over 70,000 combatants to fight for the Empire across the seas. Again, in opening the same Council in January, 1915, *i.e.* four months later, His Excellency said " Since I used those words (quoted above) we have done much more than that, thanks to the energy and powers of organisation of His Excellency the Commander-in-chief and the military authorities. British and Indian troops have been fighting side by side in no less than five theatres of war in France, Egypt, East Africa, the Persian Gulf and in



China. We have despatched or are despatching nearly 2,00,000 men overseas to fight for the Empire of which we are proud to be a living and virile unit. These have been relieved by a certain number of fresh troops from England. At the same time we have maintained our military forces on the frontier unimpaired to protect our line and to be ready as a defensive force to meet any emergency in that direction."

These numbers are large enough when we see that they were sent abroad to fight their King-Emperor's battles within a few months of the war. The following figures mentioned by the Right Honourable E. S. Montagu in his election address at Cambridge after the conclusion of the war bear an eloquent testimony to India's splendid service to the Empire in men. He said :—

"During the war 1,16,178,9 Indians were recruited to the Indian army and the grand total of all ranks sent overseas from India was 1,215,338. \*The casualties sustained by these forces were 101,439. How these figures are arrived at is shown by the following memorandum officially issued by the India Office.

At the outbreak of the war the strength of the army in India was, British officers and men, 76,953; Indians, 239,561.

Grand totals recruited in India (Indian ranks) during the war, to September 30th, 1918, Indians,

Combatants, 757,747 : non-combatants 404,042, total 1,161,789.

Number sent on service overseas from India to September 30, 1918.

		British	Indian.
France	...	18,934	131,496
East Africa	...	5,433	46,936
Mesopotamia	...	167,551	588,717
Egypt	...	19,136	116,159
Gallipoli	...	60	4,428
Salonica	...	66	4,938
Aden	...	7,386	20,243
Persian Gulf	...	968	29,457

Total	...	219,534	953,374
-------	-----	---------	---------

To the above figures must be added 4,2430 British rank sent from India to England, all or nearly all of whom doubtless proceeded on active service from the United Kingdom making a grand total of all ranks, British and Indian, sent overseas from India, of 1,215,338.

The total casualties suffered during the war up to September 30th, 1918, are—

France :—Deaths, 6,900 ; wounded, 16,380, missing 1,130 ; prisoners, 538.

East Africa :—Deaths, 2,865 ; wounded, 2,002 ; missing 46 ; prisoners, 21.

Mesopotamia :—Deaths, 14,742 ; wounded, 30,589 ;

missing, 1,505 ; prisoners, 6,817 ; presumed prisoners, 1633.

Dunster force :—Deaths, 13 ; wounded, 15.

Persia :—Deaths, 459 ; wounded, 193 ; missing, 3 ; prisoner, 1.

Egypt :—Deaths, 2,203 ; wounded, 5,321 ; missing, 410 ; prisoners, 28.

Gallipoli :—Deaths, 1,499 ; wounded, 3,761 ; missing 101 ; prisoners, 3.

Aden :—Deaths, 239 ; wounded, 505 ; missing, 24 ; prisoners, 16.

Muskat :—Deaths, 40 ; wounded, 16 ; prisoners, 30.

Frontier operations :—Deaths, 802 ; wounded, 514 ; missing, 70 ; prisoners, 5.

Grand Totals :—Deaths, 29,762 ; wounded, 59,296 ; missing, 3,289 ; prisoners, 7,459 ; presumed prisoners, 1,633.

Grand Total of Indian casualties; 101,439.

In mentioning the services of India in men the part played by the Punjab must be mentioned. Whatever the attitude of the Ruler of the land of the five rivers towards domestic political affairs it must be said to his credit that his work in helping the war was most splendid although the part played by the peoples themselves is deserving of a still higher praise. Because the services of the Punjab are mentioned specifically it is not to be inferred that other provinces did not do what they could do or ought to have done.

Every province did its duty nobly and honorably. But circumstances in the Punjab were more favourable for recruitment for the army than in any other province and that was one of the reasons which produced the results given below. "Take first the supply of men to the combatant ranks. A year ago, I told you with pride that since the war began we had furnished 1,24,000 men. That was spread over  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years. What have we done within the last year? We have furnished 1,27,095 combatants or more than in the previous  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years. All the rest of India including the Native States with more than 12 times our population has raised in the last year 1,37,000 men or slightly more than our single province. Since the war began we have raised over 2,54,000 men to fight the battles of the Empire, besides some 60,000, or 70,000 men serving as non-combatants, followers, &c. . . . . Our quarter of a million combatants are composed roughly as follows:—

Mahomedans	...	118,000
Sikhs	...	65,000
Hindus	...	63,000
Christians	...	3,000
Others	...	1,000

And I invite the attention of the great martial races not only to the total numbers but to the proportion of their manhood which they have enlisted. How well our men have fought is proved by the fact that they

have earned no less than 1,448 distinctions for gallantry in the field. These include 3 V. C.'s, two to Punjabi Mahomedans of Jhelum and Rawalpindi, one to a Dogra of Kangra—18 M. O's, 88 O. B. I's, 325 I. O. M's, 790 D.S. M's, 98 M. S. M's and 126 Foreign orders and medals."

The above is a lengthy quotation from a speech delivered by Sir Michael O'Dwyer sometime in May, 1918. But in the same month when the defection of Russia and the consequent collapse of Rumania gave our enemies a temporary superiority in men and a fresh appeal was made to India to redouble her efforts, the Punjab at once determined to double the previous year's contribution of men and raise a quarter of a million in the coming year. And before the war came to a finish it was able to raise over a lakh of additional men for the Empire.

The final total aggregating—

Mahomedans	...	1,70,000
Sikhs	...	90,000
Hindus	...	90,000
Punjabi Christians	...	40,000

The country was willing to do much more if she were helped to do so in a suitable way. The Government of India issued a lengthy communique in May, 1918, summarising the proceedings of the War Conference held in Delhi, a month before. In this communique it was admitted that the absence of military traditions

was an impediment to the enlistment of new classes. This was an admission of a painful fact. There were infinite potentialities of turning the whole population into disciplined soldiers of the King. If our government had been farseeing in the earlier times, if it had caught time by the fore-lock India could have put into the field such armies as would have defied all the enemies of the Empire. But this was not done. The people were disarmed, all love of arms and military life was killed out of them and they were turned into clerks or lawyers at their best. The old traditions died away. Traditions take a long time to build but much shorter time is enough to destroy them. Nearly two generations have come and gone since the Arms Act was placed on the statute book.

No wonder, India could not supply at once at the beginning of the war an army sufficient to check completely the advance of the enemy. Our rulers had to admit the force of all the claims that were being put forward by India for some time but partly suspicions, partly red-tapism caused delay in giving effect to them and when they were given effect to, it was done only half-heartedly. For instance, the Defence of India Force was established but a series of mistakes of omission and commission were made in connection thereof. The provision of facilities for the training of a large number of Indians as officers in the army and their free admission to commissioned ranks

was not made and when it was made it was unsatisfactory. Then, there were displayed certain indiscretions by the Government of India and the Local Governments with regard to the political activities of the educated classes. The latter were suppressed, so much so that at one time the people actually thought of passive resistance. Although the political community never thought of giving up their war activities because that was the cause of the Empire; but it can be easily imagined that an individual or a body of individuals under repression cannot be enthusiastic in co-operation with the repressors, however noble and just the cause of co-operation may be. The fact is that the government in India always asserted its rights and thought very little of its duties by the people. The people were coerced when they asserted their rights along with the performance of their duties.

If our rulers had been a bit more sympathetic and farseeing and a bit less suspicious, India would have supplied an army which could have crushed the enemy in one year. But there is no use of ruminating over might-have-beens. India's help, whatever it was, was still splendid and earned encomiums of praise from every responsible quarter.



## CHAPTER VII.

### The Indian Defence Force.

The response of the educated India for enlisting in the Indian Defence Force has been stated to be inadequate in more than one quarter, official and nonofficial. Whether this response has been actually inadequate or otherwise, and if former, whether there were any reasons for the same will be explained in this Chapter. That this question forms the subject matter of a separate chapter is necessitated by the fact that an unjustifiable slur has been cast upon the educated India, the most loyal section of His Majesty's subjects.

The question of the military rights of the people of India is as old as India's connection with England itself. It has been one of the most important questions discussed year in and year out by educated Indians. Indians desired to take up the profession of, the sword but they were debarred from doing so by the Government. That the entire Indian population, irrespective of caste and creed had not become devoid of martial spirit is evident from the fact that when the war broke out, offers of military service poured in from all parts of India ; but the wave of enthusiasm that followed the outburst of Imperial loyalty was allowed to subside and a great opportunity was wasted. Subsequent appeals made by



educated Indians to open the door of military service for them were disregarded, so much so that even Sir S. P. Sinha, sometime a member of the Executive Government of India, later on a representative of the Government of India on the Imperial Conference, a Privy Councillor and now a member of His Majesty's Government as Under-Secretary of State for India had to put in from the Presidential chair of the Indian National Congress of 1915 a very strong language on the point. No apology is needed to quote from his speech here. He put the case in a powerful way in the following passage.

“If there is trouble others will quiet it. If there is riot others will subdue it. If there is danger others will face it. If our country is in peril others will defend it.’ When a people feel like this it indicates that they have got to a stage when all sense of civic responsibility has been crushed out of them and the system which is responsible for this feeling is inconsistent with the self-respect of normal human beings”. Further on he remarked, “I feel that hitherto the Government has not only ignored but has put positive obstacles in the way of the people acquiring or retaining a spirit of national self-help in this most essential respect.”

Sir Satyendra reminded his audience of the well known humiliating fact that while, even the West Indian Negro, not to say the humblest European and

Eurasian has the right to carry arms, even the most law-abiding and respectable Indian has no such privilege except under exceptional circumstances. He said, "we ask for the right to enlist in the Regular Army irrespective of race or province of origin, subject, however, to prescribed tests of physical fitness." The argument usually advanced against this moderate proposition is that as the population of India consists of fighting and non-fighting races so recruiting must be restricted to the former. The war has demolished this theory to pieces, even the much maligned Bengalis have proved themselves second to no other race or nationality on the actual field of action. To quote the words of the Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia "they (the members of the Bengal Ambulance Corps) worked with the greatest gallantry under heavy shell fire" The fact is that a fighting race will not fight and will forget its martial spirit if it is denied the elementary right of its own defence and a nonfighting race will do the reverse under opposite circumstances.

But even the words of such a moderate statesman and leader had no effect on the authorities at the time. The march of events, however, rendered necessary in the near future a step which, if adopted earlier, would probably have shortened the duration of the war. When the crisis came and the Government of India was asked to send every available man to the sphere

of action it was obliged to replace the British units thus sent to the front for the internal defence of the country. The Defence of India Force was created essentially as a war measure and as a 'product of necessity.' Whereas this step was welcomed by India in the hope that it would lead to the acquisition of military rights by her population, the Act which was passed, did not satisfy even the modest aspirations of India. The policy of mistrust and suspicion was again clearly visible therein. The Indians were not trusted to look after the defence of their country. It was thought by those in authority that a Defence Force, predominantly Indian, would not be an efficient military force. A 'blend' was required in which a certain proportion of Europeans must be present if the 'very best fighting force' was to be the resultant. The conditions of service were the same as in the case of sepoys which, in themselves, were absolutely unsatisfactory even for that class of people which usually embraced the military profession. And what of the Indian Defence Force to join which educated youth of the country were required? These conditions were surely not of a nature so as to create any enthusiasm in the leaders or the young men. The representatives of the country in the Imperial Legislative Council had warned the government not to be very enthusiastic in their hopes of success. The Hon'ble Dr. Tej Bahadur Sapru in supporting the

Indian-Defence Force Bill in the Council said " we take our stand on our birthright and we say, as His Majesty's subjects, it is our right, our privilege that we shall be admitted to the same position as Europeans are in the army and more particularly when we are going to be enrolled for the defence of our country let us not start under a sense of inferiority in any matter. My Lord, I fully appreciate the gravity of the situation. I realise that you cannot have commissioned officers within twentyfour hours, you cannot create them to order. That will take some time but let it be understood that this bill is to be read by the country as a promise of a new era which will mark the policy of the Government in this matter."

The Indian press, similarly, warned the Government at the time. For instance, the *Bombay Chronicle* wrote that in welcoming the bill it hoped Indians would be admitted to the Commissioned ranks and given the same pay, etc., as other (European) units of the force. The difference would be keenly resented.

The Government passed the bill into the Act paying little heed to what the Indian leaders were urging. But the latter who had influence over the educated young men of the country laid aside the bargaining spirit, if it was ever displayed by them, and overlooking the drawbacks of the regulations and rules, came forward to appeal to the youth of the country to join the Force, if not for the sake of their country,

for the interests of the Empire. Mrs. Annie Besant in Madras, Messrs Tilak and Gandhi in Bombay and Babu Surrendranath Bannerji in Bengal did not spare any pains to make the Force a success.

But as the Government was unbending in its attitude the appeals did not produce any great success. The result was that only two months later the Government of India issued a resolution expressing their disappointment at the poor response and making some unjustifiable attacks on the leaders of public opinion and the educated classes. As the tone of the resolution was extremely unwise and scolding the public men and the newspaper Press had to state frankly the reasons which were at the back of the failure. The statement of the *Leader* of Allahabad is reproduced here *in extenso* which will give to the world a clear idea as to how the thing was managed.

“What are ‘the circumstances in which the scheme was initiated’? It was ‘thought desirable’—not deemed necessary—to impose an obligation of compulsory service on the European population in India. ‘There was no necessity for a corresponding measure applicable to Indian subjects of his Majesty.’ If the Defence Force Bill contained some clauses relating to the enlistment of Indians, it was not because there was military ‘necessity’ therefor, but because ‘the Governor-General in Council was anxious that the opportunity should be afforded to Indians also to enrol

themselves in the Indian Defence Force'. If this is all, it does not seem to be necessary for the Governor-General in Council to scold the Indians. There was 'no necessity' for their enrolment in the sense in which there was in the case of Europeans. Out of their goodness the Government of India afforded an opportunity to Indians, among whom 'there had for long been a desire that volunteering should be thrown open' to them. If the Indians in their un wisdom failed to take advantage of the opportunity, either because they did not see that service in the Defence Force on the terms offered was anything like the volunteering for which they had been asking or because they were merely foolish and did not understand their own interests, very well, so much the worse for them ; let them go ; nobody can help them against themselves. But where is the occasion for anger on the part of the Governor-General in Council ? If his Excellency in Council 'was assured' that if that opportunity could be afforded to them a ready and enthusiastic response would be made', and if it was found that actual facts belied the assurance, again we say, why do not you feel sorry for the misguided Indians who let slip a golden opportunity, and leave it there ? 'The proposal was accepted by the Indian Legislative Council and embodied in the Act.' We will now say, what we have thought fit to leave unsaid, that the nonofficial, or at least the elected section of the nonofficial, members

might have been firmer in pressing their points and more guarded in their speeches at the last stage ; but did they leave the Government in doubt as to what they felt ? We have read afresh the speeches of hon. nonofficial members and can make many quotations to show that they were not particularly enamoured of the scheme and were by no means without misgivings. There was an influential public meeting held at Bombay, in which the retired High Court judge and former Vice-Chancellor, Sir Narayan Chandavarkar, and other eminent and moderate men took a prominent part, and what did that meeting resolve ? After expressing its great satisfaction at the announcement made by H. E. the Viceroy before the introduction of the Bill, the resolution stated :

‘ (This meeting) trusts that in respect of commissioned rank, status, prospects and training, the Indians will be placed on a footing of perfect equality with the European British subjects of the Crown, *and in that belief urges* the people to respond wholeheartedly to the call for the defence of the Empire.’ (Our italics.)

His Excellency in Council had this quoted to him in the Legislative Council in the first discussion on the Bill in the speech of the hon. Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya. We need not dot the i's and cross the t's of the resolution. The Government of India perpetrate a superfluity when they remind the country that during

the progress of the greatest war in history a radical modification of the general conditions governing the military service could not be attempted. The reply is that nobody wanted them 'to reorganize or modify radically', etc. All that anybody ever asked for was elementary fairness. And if this had not been fought shy of throughout the history of British military policy towards Indians, if it had been seriously attempted even after the outbreak of the war when such proofs of Indian loyalty to Britain were given that the *Times* exclaimed that it was 'a day to live for', the day of final victory to which India in common with the rest of His Majesty's dominions is so earnestly looking forward' would not have been so long deferred. Even now we respectfully suggest that his Excellency in Council may try a new policy. At the worst his 'keen disappointment' will not become keener on that account. What if 'the conditions of the Defence Force' 'are the same as those applying to his Majesty's Indian forces in the regular army'? Are the latter at all satisfactory? They would have had to be modified long ago, we suspect, if the ranks of the regular army had not been closed to the educated youth of the country. The Indian Defence Force is to be manned exclusively by the latter. Surely this makes a substantial difference and the non-recognition of it is answerable for the failure which the Government of India deplore. While at this point the resolution



makes a great deal of the circumstance which is narrated in glowing language in the following passage :—

'The leaders of Indian opinion are doubtless aware that the pay of the territorial force in England was the same as that of the regular army and that men of position and means in the United Kingdom and even in distant parts of the Empire did not think it derogatory to join the ranks both of territorials and of the new army, and to serve as private soldiers shoulder to shoulder with those of other classes and many of them have given their lives in such service in France and elsewhere during the present war. They asked no questions as to pay or other conditions, they put forward no pretensions or demands. Their one ambition was to serve their country in her hour of need, and their memories will ever be honoured by the nations in whose defence they fought. The Governor-General in Council was assured that a similar ambition prevailed in India and that it was only necessary to throw open the ranks of the Defence Force to Indians to secure a hearty response.'

The Governor-General in Council was correctly assured of the aspiration of Indians but we regret that a fair comparison has not been instituted between the English and the Indian case. In fact there is no comparison between the two, there is only a contrast, saddening to Indians. There are no such national

or racial disqualifications there in the United Kingdom with regard to the higher military service as there are in India. Secondly, the conditions of service in the regular army are much more satisfying in the United Kingdom and among British troops in India than in the case of Indians in the army. What is the pay in the regular army in England or among the British units in this country? What is it among Indian troops? What are the separation and other allowances, pensions, etc., granted to the former and what is the position among Indians? What are the relative conditions of housing, etc., as between the two? What are the prospects before the former and what is all that the Indian can hope for? Have not the questions of allowances, etc., engaged the attention of the Government and Parliament in England and have not many new and very liberal financial measures in relation to them been passed since the outbreak of the war, costing very many new millions to the Treasury in this war time? Notwithstanding all that has been done in this direction, and a mighty deal it is which has been accomplished, are not murmurs still heard every now and then and does not the subject frequently come before Parliament? What have the Government of India to point to of a similar character in respect of the Indian troops? The best we can say is that we do not know what. Next, is it a fact that an English nobleman or gentleman, or a Scotch, or an Irish, or

a Welsh, or a Colonial, who joined the territorials could feel that there was nothing in the law or the practice of the kingdom to prevent him from rising to the highest position if he chose to seek the career of his life in military service? Is this consciousness a small thing? What, on the contrary, is the necessary feeling among Indians? They must feel a sense of inferiority because they cannot aspire to certain things. Any John Smith may proudly feel and work for the position held by Lord French or Marshal Haig. A Sivaji or a Madhoji Scindhia or a Ranjit Singh must on the contrary die a glorious subedar major. Is there nothing in this difference if you concede that an Indian too is a sentient being with feelings and aspirations?

The Government of India maintain a college at Quetta for the training of officers. Is any Indian admitted to that institution paid for by Indians? We are sorry that the Governor-General in Council was not advised of the inexpediency—again we are content to put it no higher than that—of employing such language as ‘pretensions or demands.’ This hurts and wounds, it cuts: an effect which could not have been intended. It also defeats the serious purpose of the resolution. If this be anything it must be to encourage enlistment. Is it thought that even among the Indians such language produces a wholesome effect?

We do not agree with the Government of India that 'the good name of India' is involved in the result of recruitment to the Defence Force as it is designed. The conditions are adverse to success, and they, and not India, must be held to blame if there is failure. To persuade young educated men under the conditions that are offered to join in large numbers, is an uphill task which will achieve very partial success. Is this not made clear by the results of the very earnest efforts made in Bombay by Mr. Tilak, in Madras by Mrs. Besant and in Bengal by Mr. Surendranath Banerjee and Dr. Sarat Mullick? The leading public men of our provinces have rather been criticised in certain quarters for not making an active effort to get recruits. We do not share the view of the critics. We rather feel disposed to think that they must be given credit for having taken a more correct measure of difficult situation. They could not go forward as enthusiastic missionaries when they found that they would have to apologize and explain away instead of making a stout-hearted stand in asking educated young men to join the force. At the same time they recognised that nobody should be dissuaded or discouraged, that every willing or doubting young man ought to be encouraged, if he wanted to acquire military knowledge and put himself to military discipline with the laudable ambition of serving his King and country. Nor have the prospects of

the Defence Force been prejudiced by anything that Indian leaders have left undone in these provinces, for what better result is there to show in Bengal, Bombay and Madras where there have been regular recruiting campaigns ?

The Government of India recognize that there are particular conditions of service 'in the Indian army which may be thought to be unsuitable to the men who enrol themselves in the new force' ; and are good enough to declare without hesitation 'that considerations of this sort will always be taken into account, and that so far as is consistent with the maintenance of the necessary standard of discipline sympathetic treatment will be accorded to all those who come forward voluntarily to serve their country.' So far so good. But may we inquire why they should not make an explicit statement in concrete terms of the particular modifications of conditions which they are prepared to make ? Will not this have a more reassuring effect on the mind of the would-be recruit than a mere reiteration of abstract sympathy ? We have a similar observation to make on the succeeding passage of the resolution, which is as follows :—

'The Government of India are also aware of Indian aspirations with reference to the commissioned ranks. It is however, perfectly well known that this matter is separately under consideration and is engaging the earnest and sympathetic attention of the Government.

The whole frame-work of the Indian army is affected by that discussion and it must be obvious to every thinking man that the enrolment of a purely temporary force constituted on a voluntary basis owing to the emergency of a great war could not justify the hurried determination of so important and difficult a question, in respect of which the Government of India are not the ultimate arbiters.'

We do not know if we may conclude from the last words that the Government of India, left to themselves, would have made or are ready to make a definite pronouncement. Apart from this, and from the strong hope created by the statement that occurs later in the resolution that the words uttered by H. E. the Viceroy in winding up the last session of the Council 'constitute a sufficient pledge of the earnest consideration by Government of the future needs of India,' for which we are thankful, we have to ask again, what is there to prevent the Government (in this term we include the Secretary of State) from admitting Indians—in limited numbers at first if thought necessary—to the colleges at Quetta, Saugor and Wellington and from giving the men so trained the King's commissions in the army? At the very least, what is there to prevent an authoritative declaration being made that commissions shall be granted? It is far from us to doubt the good faith of Government. But may we not be permitted to say that we have had so many bushelfuls of sympathetic

assurances, from so many persons, and spread over so long a series of years, that hope deferred hath verily made the heart sick. One more point is that in the passage quoted above, as also in a later passage the voluntary enlistment of Indians in the Defence Force is referred to as a war emergency measure ; whereas, as we have seen, the resolution starts with telling us virtually that the Indian enlistment is a concession to the Indian aspiration for service. The Government of India confess that the scheme is not perfect and 'is admittedly in the nature of a makeshift,' 'but', it is added, 'it is the best that could be devised in the conditions obtaining at the moment'. All that we can say is that we are profoundly sorry for 'the conditions'. The Government of India assure the country that the Defence Force scheme 'has great possibilities', and conclude their resolution with the following words :—

'That such a scheme, conceived in the general interests of imperial defence, should, in spite of its modest dimensions, prove a hopeless failure at such a time and in a country which, whatever its deficiencies, is not lacking in manpower, can hardly fail to create an impression throughout the Empire, prejudicial to the good name of India. It is, therefore, the sincere hope of the Governor-General in Council that the leaders of public opinion in this country will realize their full responsibilities in the matter and take all

possible steps forthwith to make the recruitment of these Indian units worthy of the name and aspirations of India.'

We agree that India is not lacking in manpower. And we congratulate the Government of India on the very belated realization of a truism. The scheme is described as a 'hopeless failure'. We have no quarrel with this description. And here we exhaust the points of agreement between us and this last passage of the resolution. When the whole of the facts is impartially placed before the Empire and the world, the verdict will not be condemnation of India. Of this we are pretty confident. If we may venture to predict the character of that verdict, it will be somewhat as follows :

'For long have the people of India cried that they should not be emasculated, that they should not be mistrusted, that they should be given full opportunities of participating in the defence of their country. Their cry went unheeded. The mighty war broke out and India appealed with one voice to be used. She was not heard. A belated attempt was made to enlist a comparatively few men temporarily under adverse conditions. The elected spokesmen of the people begged that the scheme should be tried under fair and hopeful conditions. They were not listened to. Still an unprejudiced effort was made for its success. The Government of India then came out with a resolution



which could not but offend sentiment. India and her children of all classes and communities have done all that they ever could do in the way of help and service in the war. This has been acknowledged. The failure of the Defence Force scheme, started under unfavourable conditions, cast no slur on the Indian people. It is ungracious of the Government of India to have made any reflection directly or indirectly, on Indian loyalty and Indian patriotism.'

The leaders of Indian opinion know their duty and need not be lectured about it. Did not the Indian members of Council support the measure in spite of its patent defects and inequalities. Have not many meetings been held in Bengal, Bombay and Madras? Have not stirring appeals been made to eligible young men? Has not the press in the whole country advised them to join the Force? We will conclude with a quotation from the greatest of those leaders, Sir Pherozshah Mehta, who uttered the following prophetic warning at the Indian National Congress in December, 1888 :—  
 '.....you...ought not to emasculate a whole nation. It may be said that the time may come in future when these restrictions will be removed. But remember that when once the Indian people become emasculated, it will be a very long time indeed before you can get them to recover their manliness and their vigour.  
 ... Perhaps a good many of you remember the case of James II, who, when in the hour of peril, appealed

to the Duke of Bedford (whose son had been judicially murdered by the King) for help to whom the old nobleman replied : " I had once a son whom I could have sent to your assistance. But I have not got him now." In the same way, in some hour of need, India might have to say something similar to England.'

To an impartial reader the above lengthy quotation from an Indian paper will show that neither the educated youth of the country nor the leaders of public opinion are blameable for the "disappointing response made by the country in the respect of the Defence of India Force.

The Defence Force Act was modified in 1918 but the modifications made hardly any improvement on the original from the Indian point of view. The response was only, therefore, correspondingly better.



## CHAPTER VIII.

---

### Some Indian Heroes.

*To-day, for the first time we had to fight against the Indians and the devil knows those brown rascals are not to be under-rated. At first, we spoke with contempt of the Indians. To-day we learned to look at them in a different light—the devil knows what the English had put into those fellows. Anyhow those who stormed our lines seemed either drunk or possessed with an evil spirit. With fearful shouting, in comparison with which our hurrahs are like the whining of a baby, thousands of those brown forms rushed upon us as suddenly as if they were shot out of a fog so that at first we were completely taken by surprise.*

*At a hundred metres we opened a destructive fire which mowed down hundreds but in spite of that the others advanced, springing forward like cats and surmounting obstacles with unexampled agility. In no time they were in our trenches and truly these brown enemies were not to be despised. With butt ends, bayonets, swords and daggers we fought each other and we had bitter hard work which, however, was lightened by re-inforcements which arrived quickly before we drove the fellows out of the trenches.*

A LETTER FROM A GERMAN SOLDIER.

Colonel Tod has written in his famous book *Rajasthan*, "Homer's heroes were pigmies to the Kurus whose bracelet, we may doubt, if Ajax could have lifted." Abul Fazal, the well-known Minister of Akbar wrote about the Hindus "Their character shines brightest in adversity. Their soldiers know not what it is to flee from the field of battle but when the success of the combat becomes doubtful they dismount their horses and throw away their lives in payment of the debt of valour." Similar testimony can be quoted about the valour of Musalmans but as their deeds are a matter of recent history, it is unnecessary to refer to them here. The valour of Indian troops has been very conspicuous during this war.

The following editorial paragraph that appeared in the "Morning Post" (England) some time in July, 1915 as a "Tribute to (Indian) valour" is *apropos*.

"In our issue of yesterday appeared an account of some of the deeds of valour of our Indian troops which must stir the blood of every true son of the Empire. A year ago there were many people who believed that the days of valiant doings were gone. There were some, particularly among our politicians, who did not scruple to say that the Empire was a paper Empire a mere matter of red spots on a map, a figment of the 'Imperialist' mind which must vanish at the first test of realities. They pictured the dominions falling

away, South Africa cutting adrift from us and India throwing off the "British yoke." The day of trial came with dramatic suddenness and found us all unprepared. Yet the bonds of Empire have stood the strain and after a year of trial the whole is stronger and closer-knit than ever before. No better proof could be asked for than the wonderful response of the Indian people to the call of war. On a score of hard-fought fields they have proved their abiding loyalty and their warlike worth. The test has been severe. The long winter campaign tried our Indian troops sorely, unused as they are to the conditions of wet mud and sudden change that mark the western European climate. Quite new to trench warfare they had endured with British troops all the nerve-racking strain of modern battle. They have played their part under the deadly hail of artillery, under the storm of machinegun or rifle fire or amid the rain of grenades at close quarters. And throughout they have proved themselves worthy soldiers of the King. In all the long history of British wars it would be hard to find a tale of heroism greater than that of Lieutenant Smyth and his ten sepoys who fell to a man in carrying bombs to their hard-pressed comrades. The attempt was desperate, well nigh impossible ; yet the work was done. The advance of the 57th Rifles across nearly a mile of open ground, under heavy fire, is a deed of which the best European troops might feel proud ; and they were only repulsed

by the enemy by the use of poisonous gas. It was manhood pitted against devilish science and, for the moment, German cunning prevailed. But there are failures as glorious as success and our Indian army added in that repulse to the long record of valorous deeds that have made and held the Empire. India may well be proud of her share in the fame which the sons of the Empire had added in the past year to its name."

The names of Rajput princes such as Maharaja Sir Ganga Singh Bahadur of Bikaner, Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh of Jodhpur, Maharaja Sir Sumer Singh (who, alas! died before he could see the happy outcome of his sacrifices, personal and otherwise), Maharaja Sir Madan Singh of Kishangarh; of Sikh rulers, as Maharaja Sir Mahendra Singh of Patiala will always shine in the pages of the history of this European War. These and several others went to the fields of action personally and by taking part in actual warfare showed their devotion to the British Throne. They could have enjoyed the luxuries of their palaces had they so chosen but no, they did not choose to adopt that course when the safety of the British Empire was at stake. Such a sacrifice can very properly be described as an act of valour. But the object of this chapter is not to record the services or the sacrifices of such distinguished personages, that will be done at the proper

place. This chapter will record the deeds of valour of some of our ordinary soldiers. Of course every soldier fought bravely and tenaciously and all those who fought and died, who fought and got wounded, even those who fought and came back victorious were heroes, great heroes and deserve the highest respect. They did their duty, they performed their *dharma* in a manner worthy of the ancient traditions of the country of their birth. But the deeds of special valour of certain soldiers came to the notice of their officers and they were rewarded with distinctions of the highest merits.

It will be remembered that before 1911 Indians were not eligible for the grant of the Victoria Cross, the highest distinction which personal heroism could win within the British Empire. His Majesty King-Emperor George V had announced on the occasion of the Delhi Darbar this much coveted boon. The war has proved that His Majesty's Indian subjects were quite fit for the grant of this high distinction.

The deeds which won them this enviable recognition are worth recording.

#### 1. *Sepoy Khudadad of 129th Baluchis.*

On the 31st October, 1914, in an action at Hellebroke in Belgium, no. 4050 sepoy Khudadad of the 129th Duke of Connaught's own Baluchis was with one of Regimental machine guns. The detachment was overwhelmed by numbers. One gun had been put out

of action by a shell and three men remaining with it were ordered to retire. The British Officer in charge of the detachment was wounded. Sepoy Khudadad remained working the other gun until all the other firemen of the detachment had been killed. He was wounded but recovered of his wound after a short time when he rejoined his corps.

### 2. *Naik Darwan Singh Negi.*

In the action of the night of the 23rd and 24th November near Fezthuhert, no. 1909 Naik Darwan Singh Negi of B. Company, 39th Garhwal Rifles, 1st Battalion where the Regiment was engaged in retaking and clearing the enemy out of our trenches, was from first to last one of the first to push round each successive traverse taken in the midst of a severe fire from bombs and rifles at the closest range. Although wounded in two places, in the head and also in the arm, he continued fighting amongst the foremost and did not even report himself wounded till he met his Company Commander after the action was over. Naik Darwan Singh Negi was summoned on the 5th December to the general head quarters to receive his Victoria Cross at the hands of His Imperial Majesty the King-Emperor himself.

3. *Rifleman Gobar Singh Negi* of the 2nd Battalion, 39th Garhwal Rifles, who won his award for conspicuous deeds of bravery and valour at Neuve Chapelle on March 10th, 1915. It is a pity that Rifleman Gobar Singh did not live to wear his Cross nor to learn



that it had been won by him. His memory, however, is held in reverence by all who admire brave men.

4. *Jamadar Mir Dast*, 55th Coke's Rifles attached to 57th Wilde's Rifles.

*Jamadar Mir Dast* won this distinction for most conspicuous bravery and great ability at Ypres on 26th April, 1915 when he led his platoon with great gallantry during the attack and afterwards collected various parties of the Regiment (when no British officers were left) and kept them under command until the retirement was ordered. *Jamadar Mir Dast* subsequently on this day displayed remarkable courage in helping to carry eight British and Indian officers into safety, while exposed to very heavy fire.

5. *Rifleman Kulbir Thapa*, 2nd Battalion, 3rd Gurkha Rifles, won his distinction for most conspicuous bravery during operations against the German trenches south of Mauquissart when, himself wounded, on the 25th September, 1915, he found a badly wounded soldier of the 2nd Leicestorshire Regiment\* behind the first line German trench and though urged by the British Officer to save himself he remained with him all day and night. In the early morning of the 26th September, in misty weather he brought him out through the German wire and leaving him in a place of comparative safety returned and brought in two wounded Gurkhas one after the other. He then went back in broad day light for the British soldier and

brought him in also carrying him most of the way and being at most points under the enemy's fire.

6. *Lance Naik Lala* of 41st Dogras. Finding a British Officer of another regiment lying close to the enemy he dragged him into a temporary shelter which he himself had made and in which he had already bandaged four wounded men. After bandaging his wounds he heard calls from the Adjutant of his own Regiment who was lying in the open severely wounded. The enemy were not more than one hundred yards distant and it seemed certain death to go out in that direction but Lance Naik Lala insisted on going out to his Adjutant and offered to crawl back with him on his back at once. When this was not permitted he stripped off his own clothing to keep the wounded officer warmer and stayed with him till just before dark he returned to the shelter. After dark he carried the first wounded officer back to the main trenches and then returning with a stretcher carried back his Adjutant. He set a magnificent example of courage and devotion to his officers.

7. *Sepoy Chatta Singh*, 9th Bhopal Infantry was awarded the Cross for most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in leaving cover to assist his Commanding Officer who was lying wounded and helpless in the open. Sepoy Chatta Singh bound up the officers wound and then dug cover for him with his entrenching tool, being exposed all the time to very heavy rifle

fire. For five hours until nightfall he remained beside the wounded officer shielding him with his own body on the exposed side. He, then, under cover of darkness, went back for assistance and brought the officer into safety.

8. *Naik Shahamad Khan*, of the Punjabis, was in charge of a machine gun section in an exposed position in front of and covering a gap in our new line within 150 yards of the enemy's entrenched position. He beat off their counter attacks and worked his gun single handed after all his men, except two belt fillers, had become casualties. For three hours he held the gap under very heavy fire while it was being made secure. When his gun was knocked out by hostile fire he and his two belt fillers held their ground with rifles till ordered to withdraw. With three men sent to assist him he then brought back his gun, ammunition and one severely wounded man unable to walk. Finally he himself returned and removed all remaining arms and equipment except two shovels. But for his great gallantry and determination our line must have been penetrated by the enemy.

9. *Lance Dafedar* (now *Jamadar*) *Gobind Singh* of the 26th Light Cavalry attached to 2nd Lancers. A full description of his deeds of valour is given separately in this chapter by the able pen of *St. Nihal Singh*.

10. *Rifleman Karanbahadur Rana* of Gurkhas who won his cross in Mesopotamia on June 22nd, 1918.

11. The elventh, the last award was posthumously conferred on *Risaldar Badlu Singh*, late 14th Lancers attached to the 29th Lancers, Indian army. The official record of his achievement is expressed in the following terms:—

“For most conspicuous bravery and self sacrifice on the morning of September 23rd, 1918, when his squadron charged a strong enemy position on the west bank of the river Jordan between the river and Khes Samariveh village. On nearing the position Resaldar Badlu Singh realised that the squadron was suffering casualties from a small hill on the left front occupied by machine guns and 200 infantry. Without the slightest hesitation he collected six other ranks and with the greatest dash and an entire disregard of danger charged and captured the position thereby saving very heavy casualties to the squadron. He was mortally wounded on the very top of the hill when capturing one of the machine guns single handed but all the machine guns and infantry had surrendered to him before he died. His valour and initiative were of the highest order.”

These are the Victoria Cross Indian heroes whose exploits has been mentioned very briefly. But to give to the reader an idea of the amount of dash and self sacrifice the following detailed description of only one of these, viz., Gobind Singh is quoted from an article of St. Nihal Singh contibuted to the pages of the *Commonweal* of Madras

## INDIAN GALLANTRY IN FRANCE

"The gallant exploit of the latest Indian V. C., Jamadar Gobind Singh who, accompanied by a number of Indian officers on leave from France, has been paying a brief visit to London, has electrified his countrymen in the Empire's capital. Since it is unlikely that more than the official notification, which gives a bare skeleton account of the incident, without flesh and blood, will be published in India, it may be of interest to give a detailed account of the heroic deed of our fighter.

I called on the Indian hero at the magnificently appointed house in South Kensington (London) where Indian officers are entertained as the guests of the British nation, to hear from his own lips the details of the story of his brave deed. He is rather thin and quite tall for a Rajput, and has the clear-cut, intelligent features of the Rathors. I found him surrounded by a number of his comrades who recently showed the Germans that the Indian cavalry is ready to fight with them at any time, and able to acquit itself with glory. A bright fire burned in the large grate in the dining room where, in the years gone by, a Royal Duke used to eat his meals. The Rajput V. C., spoke to me in simple Hindi, jerking out his sentences in soldier fashion. So shy is he that his comrades had often to supplement his narrative.

The squadron to which the jamadar is at present attached, found itself completely cut off from the armies

operating against the Germans during the recent 'push' at Cambrai. Encircled by the enemy on three sides, with a canal or river (I could not make out which) on the fourth, the men entrenched themselves, determined to save themselves or to die.

The officer in command, finding it imperative to get into communication with the General Staff, asked for a volunteer to carry the despatch to headquarters. It was out of the question to take the stream route. The only alternative was to break through the German lines. That meant braving the enemy fire over a distance of a mile and a half.

Mounted on his steed, a brave Indian fared forth into 'No Man's land'. He had not gone very far when German bullets riddled him and his horse.

One after another seven Indians followed this volunteer and all shared his fate.

Gobind Singh, then a Lance-Dafedar, saw eight Indians mercilessly shot by the Germans. His Rathor blood\* boiled in him, and he begged to be allowed to carry the despatch. Seated on his charger, he galloped at full speed into 'No Man's Land' making straight as a bullet for his objective. The German machine guns were at once trained upon him. So accurate was their aim that they described, with their bullets, on either side of the animal, a curve the shape of his leg, not far from where it hung down from the saddle. The horse fell some 600 yards short of the

destination. Nothing daunted, the brave Rathor ran the whole distance on foot and arrived at the headquarters with the despatch without having received a single wound.

The Commandant's letter called for a reply. Gobind Singh offered to take it back to the trench, over the mile-and-a-half stretch raked by German fire. Mounted on the horse that belonged to the General's orderly, he sallied forth on his return journey. He was instantly greeted with a fusillade of machine gun fire. About half way across 'No Man's Land' his horse fell under him, and he ran for dear life. The Germans gave chase, firing all the time but Gobind Singh was fleet of foot and kept well ahead of them. After a few moments, that seemed an eternity, counter-fire from the isolated Indian Squadron drove back the pursuers and Gobind Singh jumped into the trench with his comrades. For the second time he had cheated the Germans of their prey.

The despatch that he brought required a reply. His offer to ride through the valley of the shadow of death for the third time was accepted. He was given leave to choose any horse that he wanted. Brave hearts wished Godspeed to their comrade who they had come to believe, bore a charmed life.

When Gobind Singh galloped, for the third time into 'No Man's Land,' he was not greeted with German machinegun fire, as had been his experience on

both the previous occasions. Not a bullet whizzed past him. For all the noise that he could hear, the Hun trench might have been empty.

He must have covered half of the mile-and-a-half flight, when he discovered the German game. Their big guns suddenly thundered forth, creating a wall of bursting shells in front of him. A friendly voice from a shellhole warned him that to attempt to ride through that barrage meant certain death. Gobind Singh, however, without stopping to count the cost, charged the wall of fire.

A shell fell on the horse that the Rajput was riding. Its hind-quarters were blown to atoms. Still seated in the saddle, with his feet in the stirrups, Gobind Singh fell violently to the ground, his whole body drenched with gore.

The sight of the horse's blood with which he was covered made him believe that he had been seriously wounded. Hypnotised with the conviction that he was not able to run, he slowly walked the 200 yards or so that still stretched between him and the British Headquarters, the Germans ceaselessly firing at him.

On arriving at headquarters, Gobind Singh discovered, to his great surprise, that for the third time he had slipped unhurt out of the jaws of death. The surgeon who examined him found that he had not suffered so much as a scratch. The General found his spirit as ever. He asked if there was another message



to be sent, and expressed his willingness to carry it through the German lines if that were necessary.

It only remains to be added that soon afterwards our armies, pushing from behind, dislodged the Germans from their position and rescued the Indian cavalry that had been isolated. I am told that many other decorations were won by our countrymen, among them a Military Cross and several Indian Orders of Merit.

The Indian hero and his valiant comrades are being feasted and feted in London. His Majesty pinned the Victoria Cross to Gobind Singh's breast and highly praised his deed at an investiture held on Wednesday, February 6th. The National Indian Association held an 'At Home' at 21 Cromwell Road in his honour on the same day, at which Lieutenant-General His Highness Maharaja Sir Partap Singh and General Sir O'Moore Creagh lauded him, and an address in Hindi was read by one of his countrymen."

These Victoria Cross heroes have brought fame not only upon themselves but to their mother country as well. India is proud of them and will ever remember their names with gratitude. This record alone is sufficient to fill the heart of every true son of India with joy undescribable.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### India's Services in Materials.

*Taking the material side first, I think it is not yet fully appreciated how effectively India contributed to meet war requirements. To form a correct estimate it is necessary to picture the special difficulties which arose particularly during the later phases of the great conflict. The forces in Mesopotamia, for which we were largely responsible were fighting in a country utterly deficient of the ordinary requirements of a modern army. There were no roads, railways or mechanical transport facilities on the rivers. The country over which the troops had to move was devoid of timber, of fuel, even of ordinary stone. Every thing, even fire wood for cooking and fodder for the horses had consequently to be imported.....*

LORD CHELMSFORD IN FEBRUARY, 1919.

Absolutely immeasurable in terms of pounds, shillings and pence have been the services of India on the material side in the successful prosecution of the war. When the war broke out, most of the factories in the United Kingdom which were at that time engaged in the manufacture of articles of necessity or of luxury had to be converted into ammunition workshops. The labourers or that part of the factory operatives which did not or could not go to the actual battlefield were drifted on to these factories. Every

other industry had to be sacrificed in the interests of the national defence and the entire attention concentrated on the manufacture of the requirements of the war. Agriculture or what little of it there was in the British Isles was absolutely abandoned. But even this was not sufficient. The war happened to be on a very colossal scale and the factories of the United Kingdom were not sufficient to cope with the task. Other manufacturing countries in Europe were busy in the turn out of their own military requirements and instead of helping the Great Britain they themselves were dependant on the latter's assistance. True, there was America but, in the first place, she was a neutral country and, then, she demanded almost prohibitive price for the articles she could supply. What was England to do under these circumstances? She turned her eyes to her colonies and India. Her agricultural produce India could supply in any quantities. Food grains and raw materials she had in abundance. She contributed raw materials and food stuffs not only for her own armies abroad, and for the needs of the population of Great Britain but she met the needs of the Allies also. For instance, India sent 44,000 tons of hides to Italy. As for manufactured articles, India, due to the pre-war policy of benevolent neutrality of her Government, was not sufficiently prepared to undertake the manufacture of war supplies commensurate with the requirements of the situation.

Even Mr. Montagu had to admit in 1918 "how much more India could do for us and for herself now had her industries only been developed in the past." "When India set out," Mr. Montagu added, "to make things, railway engines, trucks and even rails she found herself requiring machinery from overseas which it was impossible to get on the necessary scale." This was the reason probably of the collapse of the medical and supply arrangements in Mesopotamia which led to the failure of the British at Kut.

This failure, however, proved to be an eye opener for the future. The Government of India set out at once to take stock of India's industrial capabilities to meet the requirements of the war. His Excellency Sir Charles Munro, the Commander-in-Chief of the Indian Army, immediately after the assumption of his high office, had to organise the present Munitions Board for India with Sir Thomas Holland as president thereof and with provincial organisations at principal centres of trade and industries, *viz.*, Calcutta, Bombay, Madras, Lahore, Delhi, Nagpur, Allahabad, Patna and Rangoon. The Munitions Department was divided among the following branches:—(1) Stores, (2) Textiles, (3) Hide and Wool, (4) Ship building, (5) Industrial intelligence, (6) Minerals, (7) Timber, (8) Priority, (9) Home indent and (10) Railway materials. To these were added, later on, jute, ordnance, munitions manufactures and the original Stores Branch was divided into five sections

these being, stores miscellaneous, paints and oil, hardware, metals, electrical and mechanical and stores distribution. As the work developed the Army Clothing Factories were also taken over by the Munitions Board and the original textile branch was divided into textiles, clothing and clothing contracts. Ordnance and ammunition factories were also similarly taken over by the Board which became thus responsible for the supply, like some big London Stores, of articles from the smallest needle to the biggest anchor. It was the aim of the Munitions Department to get as far as possible all its requirements from indigenous sources and it was for that reason that the assistance of almost every factory, small or great, was employed in turning out war materials.

The division of the Munitions Board, described above, can give the reader an idea as to the number and variety of war materials India was required to supply. It is a pity that the Munitions Board has not, up till the publication of this volume, published its report and until that is published it is impossible to gauge correctly the magnitude of India's contributions on the material side. The mere fact that in the 15 months ending with 30th June, 1918, the Board's expenditure in India (exclusive of stores bought abroad) was some 23 crores of rupees (15 millions sterling) tells its own tale. Clothing of all sorts, tents, cotton fabrics and blankets for the Indian

army were almost entirely supplied from India. Two million pairs of boots were made for the government in a year as compared with less than 100,000 in 1913-14. The Government Harness Factory at Cawnpore multiplied its production from 33,000 lbs of leather in 1913-14 to nearly 200,000 lbs in the first three months of 1918-19.

In January, 1918, the Board took over control of the ordinance factories and the cash expenditure on these which was about 50 lakhs in 1913-14 reached Rs. 1,16,25,000 in the first three months of the financial year 1918-19. Timber of all shapes was supplied to the Forces in Egypt, Salonika, East Africa and Mesopotamia to a value of Rs. 24,000,000 a month. The Board controlled with the assent of the company, the entire output of pig iron and steel from the Tata Company's works at Sakchi (re-christened Jamshedpur by His Excellency Lord Chelmsford after the name of the founder, Jamshedji Naorozji Tata, the illustrious father of the present proprietor, Sir Dorab Tata). The military assistance rendered by Indian Industrial concerns is illustrated by a brief description, in a separate chapter, of the services of Sir Dorab Tata's concerns. The Tata Iron Works supplied 1,800 miles of Railway Truck and two hundred engines.

The value of Indian exports exceeded £100 million yearly. The State controlled prices at considerably less than the prevailing prices and rates secured considerable

savings in the war bill of the Allies which meant a corresponding sacrifice on the part of India. As India's material resources were organised to supply the equipment of Indian troops and provide the Allies' essential requisites for prosecuting the war the extra equipment supplied reached the value of £ 80 million.

Of essential mineral exports, wolfram, one-third of the world's supply, manganese ores, mica, jute, shellac and saltpetre were purchased by the Government at controlled prices which were three to five times less than those prevailing in neutral countries. For its own use and that of the Allies, rice, maize, barley, gram oil-seeds, oil and medicinal stuff were exported at controlled prices. Indian hides provided one-third the army boots. Skins were purchased at controlled prices considerably less than what prevailed elsewhere. Three million tons of wheat were supplied to the Allies, the shipments being made available at considerably less prices than those ruling in the world markets. To meet one year's requirements forty-one million yards khaki and hundred and eighty-two million pounds of wool were exported to England.\*

Take the services rendered by the Railways of India. In war, Railways are the first transporting

\*These figures have been taken from the Trade Supplement of the *London Times* and probably come upto the end of June, 1918. The subsequent 5 months of war must have raised the figures considerably.

agencies to suffer. The reasons are obvious. Millions of men have to be moved to the principal seats of war. Millions of tons of war stores have to be carried. Railway lines in the war zone have to be provided in desperate haste. In the case of countries like the United Kingdom and India with, in ordinary years, a great coasting trade, the concentration of all shipping on war service means that the traffic which they usually carry have to be borne by the Railways. For instance, in normal years, immense quantities of coal are carried by sea from Calcutta to Bombay, all this was now thrown on the Railways. In India, branches and lines were temporarily dismantled to meet the urgent demand for rails and rolling stock for Mesopotamia, East Africa and Palestine. The cost of it in money, must have been immense. But apart from cost which meant considerable financial suffering for India, the actual suffering caused to the population was also great. Several trains had to be discontinued, trains that actually ran were over-crowded because it was impossible to obtain new locomotives and new carriages and Railway fares had to be raised to discourage travelling.

India's contribution in materials was not limited to a few articles. The number of the commodities supplied was legion and it is simply impossible to quote figures of the supply of every or even many articles. In September, 1917, in order to meet an increased demand



for fodder for the the forces overseas the Quarter-master-General requested the Punjab Government to arrange for the supply of 30,000 tons baled white bhusa by March 31st, 1918 and within that time about 26,000 tons was actually supplied. The full amount asked for was completed by April 16th. The supply was continued upto May 31st, 1918 by which date 39,383 tons was supplied. In the same way the United Provinces Government undertook to supply 50,000 tons of baled hay for the overseas forces before the rains of 1918. By the 25th May, 1918, 50,000 tons had been baled and an extra 2,000 tons remained unbaled.

The illustrations given above of the supply of a few commodities can give only a faint idea of how India did her duty in this respect. But the term "materials" includes in it an unlimited number of articles from a battleship or an aeroplane down to a smallest needle. It is enough to say that whatever India could give she gave freely regardless of the cost thereof or the inconvenience caused thereby. If we take up the list of the weekly supplies of comforts for troops from every province, nay, from every district of India it will be found that articles of numberless varieties and in large quantities were given freely by charitably disposed and well-to-do persons. The supply of instructive and interesting literature dealing with religion, fiction and other subjects, of newspapers, binoculars, articles of

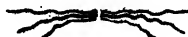
dressings, toilet requisites, sweatmeats and a thousand other articles was a phenomenon of almost daily occurrence.

The following extract from a speech of His Excellency Lord Chelmsford delivered on 6th February, 1919 in the Indian Legislative Council will show the magnitude of India's war efforts on the material side.

"Taking the material side first I think it is not still fully appreciated how effectively India contributed to meet war requirements. To form a correct estimate it is necessary to picture the special difficulties which arose particularly during the later phases of the great conflict. The forces in Mesopotamia, for which we were largely responsible, were fighting in a country utterly deficient of the ordinary requirements of a modern army. There were no roads, railways or mechanical transport facilities on the rivers. The country over which the troops had to move was devoid of timber, of fuel, even of ordinary stone. Everything, even firewood for cooking and fodder for the horses, had consequently to be imported. While endeavouring to meet the wants of the armies in the field our supplying officers in India were daily confronted with the competing wants of the civil population in India. At the same time we had to restrict to the barest necessities the import into India of manufactured goods in order to free the energies of war workers in the allied countries. The maintenance of this delicate

balance between conflicting demands imposed a heavy burden of great complexity on the responsible departments of government. The necessity of supplying the coal required by transports East of Suez introduced an additional complication by leaving us with insufficient fuel to meet the requirements of essential industries and transport within India itself. The general shortage of sea freight introduced further difficulties. The depletion of our supplies of manufactured goods partly through unusual military consumption and partly by the cutting of imports to which I have already alluded was naturally attended by a disturbance of prices and withholding of stocks which made it difficult to obtain, at short notice, the necessary equipment and stores for the army. The complex and rapidly changing conditions that followed the depredations of enemy submarines specially during the last two years of the war thrust a burden on India that cannot be appreciated fully in those countries where all munitions of war can be manufactured in the country itself. Habits and administrative methods which had rested on a basis of uninterrupted import had rapidly to be recast. The manufacture of substitutes had to be revised without the usual facilities of suitable machinery. Iron, steel, coke and various other necessities had to be rationed, expert labour trained and developed, resources turned to account. The lessons learnt and the new industries inaugurated must now be developed and

converted into permanent acquisitions. To this question Government is devoting its earnest attention. Whilst making special endeavours to be herself less dependent on outside sources of supply India has contributed raw materials and food stuffs to meet the needs of the Allies generally. To England we sent over 100,000 tons of hides and to Italy about 44,000 tons with a total value of some 21 millions sterling. As a result of special efforts a considerable fraction of these were tanned before export and in order to assist in turning this new development to permanent account we engaged experts in tanning in leather goods manufacture and tan-stuff research. Timber for structural works exclusive of fuel and railway sleepers to the extent of 200,000 tons were sent to the armies to the near East. Railway materials of local manufacture sufficient to construct over 1,800 miles of track and 1,300 feet of bridging were despatched, while, from our own stock, we spared 229 locomotives and 5,900 vehicles. The unusual military demand for cotton clothing was entirely met by Indian mills whilst a large fraction of the woollen goods required were also manufactured locally from indigenous and imported Tibetan wool. Altogether 42 million articles of troops clothing were manufactured."



## CHAPTER X.

---

### Indian Musalmans and the War.

*My Musalman subjects know well that the rupture with Turkey was forced upon me against my will, and I recognise with appreciation and gratitude the proofs they have hastened to give of their loyalty, devotion and support.*

H. M. THE KING-EMPEROR.

*As long as the Ottomans were defending themselves from the unjust attacks of other nations, the Indian Musalmans were whole-heartedly with them, but they refuse to be dragged into an aggressive venture that they may choose to take. The Indian Musalmans have to look to their own interests, and the care of the interests of Islam in their own country is the prime duty that has fallen upon them.*

HON'BLE MR. MAZHAR-UL-HAQUE.

Musalmans being an integral portion of the population of India a separate chapter for the discussion of their attitude towards the war was apparently as unnecessary as one for discussing the attitude of Hindus, Parsis or Sikhs. But there were special circumstances which once made the world look askance at the loyalty of this section of the Indian population to the cause of Great Britain and her Allies, the participation

of the Ottoman Empire in the war against the latter being the most important. Turkey is a Muslim Power. The Sultan of Turkey is the religious head, the Caliph to whom Muslims all the world over owe religious allegiance. Thus, while the religious and spiritual sympathy of the Indian Musalmans was claimed by Turkey, their temporal sympathy went with Great Britain and at one time it was feared that the spirit might gain ascendancy over matter and Indian Musalmans might be led by their sentiments to go against England.

There were other reasons also, although of minor importance. The war between Turkey and Italy and the apparent indifference of Great Britain throughout the Balkan war had bitterly annoyed some Mahomedans in the Punjab and N. W. F. Provinces. Certain utterances of British statesmen were interpreted as indicating that Britain favoured a combination against Turkey. During the Balkan wars subscriptions were raised among Musalmans in the Punjab and N. W. F. Provinces for a medical mission and for the Turkish Red Crescent Funds and in the winter of 1912 some of the money collected was presented to the Grand-Vizier at Constantinople. Two years later the Turkish Consul-General came to Lahore to present to the Badshahi Mosque a carpet sent by the order of the Sultan as a token of gratitude for pecuniary sympathy recently shown to Turkey. A fortnight later, Turkish Doctors

of the Red Crescent Society paid a similar visit. The influence of these important visits had turned a small section of Punjab Muslims out of humour with the British Government.

The sympathy of Indian Muslims with Turkey was noticeable as long ago as the Crimean war and, before the outbreak of the European war, had strengthened with improved communications and a wider interest in the world outside India. The feeling had been fanned by pan-Islamic influences, some of which have been suggested above.

In the independent territory across the border of the North-West Frontier Province there is a small colony of Hindustani fanatics who go by the name of Mujahidin, who believe in the literal interpretation of the Quran and rejection of all priestly forms, ceremonies and glosses on the Holy Writ. The members of this sect regard India as a land not governed by Muslims and, therefore, unfit for Muslim habitation, a land of the enemy (*Dar-ul-harb*). They have always preached Jihad. These Wahabis sent their missionaries to India now and then to spread here a pan-Islamic and anti-British movement and their influence in certain quarters was noticeable also.

Then there were Turkish influences at work. A Turkish paper known as *Jahan-i-Islam* was secretly despatched and distributed in certain parts of India. This was a newspaper containing articles in Arabic,

Turkish and Hindi which was started in Constantinople about May, 1914. Copies of this paper were at first freely obtainable both at Lahore and Calcutta but owing to its violently anti-Christian tone its importation into India was prohibited in August, 1914. After the declaration of the war the Urdu section of the paper contained a leading article by Hardayal and virulently anti-British articles by the Egyptian Nationalist leaders, Farid Bey and Mansur Arifat. In the issue of 20th November, 1914, a speech of Enver Pasha was reported in which, among other things, he said :—

“ This is the time that the *Ghadr* should be declared in India, the magazines of the English should be plundered, their weapons looted and they should be killed therewith. The Indians number 32 crores and at the best the English are only 2 lakhs ; they should be murdered, they have no army. The Suez Canal will shortly be closed by the Turks but he who will die and liberate the country and his nation will live for ever. Hindus and Mahomedans, you are both soldiers of the army and you are brothers and this low degraded English is your enemy. You should become *Ghazis* by declaring *Jehad* and by combining with your brothers murder the English and liberate India.”

After Turkey had entered the war two Indian



Mahomedans came to India who had been in Turkey as members of the Red Crescent Society which had gone from India to afford medical relief to the Turkish army in the Balkan war. These two Mahomedans arrived in India about the end of 1914 as emissaries of the Young Turk Party to form secret societies among Mahomedans in this country.

Lastly there were the Germans who were most active in alienating the sympathies of Indian Mahomedans with the British Government.

As they did in Turkey where they succeeded and in Persia where they failed, the Germans spread lying reports in India as well to the effect that the German Emperor and the German people had become converts to Islam.

It was by this and similar fraudulent tricks that Germans were able to seduce a Musalman here and a Musalman there in India who in the early days of war adopted an antagonistic attitude towards the British Government and showed friendliness to Turkey and her seducers. But the effect of such tactics could not possibly have been lasting. They soon knew what the real attitude of Germany was towards Islam. Did not General Smuts report about the same time that in the German Government archives captured at Moshi the following circular was discovered :—

**ALL MILITARY STATIONS.**

You are requested to send within three months from date of receipt, a report stating what can be done by means of Government servants

and Government teachers effectively to counteract the spread of Islamic propaganda. Do you consider it possible to make a regulation prohibiting Islam altogether? Possibly a rule might be enforced by which teachers would not be allowed to perform circumcisions or act as teachers in the mosques, etc. The same prohibition might also be applied to other Government servants. The encouragement of pig breeding among natives is recommended by experts as an effective means of stopping the spread of Islam. Please consider this point also.

This circular was signed by Dr. Schnee, the Imperial Governor of German East Africa and was dated some months before the outbreak of war. It was despatched to the District Commissioners in German East Africa.

Such influences were at work when war was announced between Great Britain and Turkey. But if these influences were capable of alienating the sympathies of an infinitesimally small portion of His Majesty's Indian Muslim subjects from British Rule in India, there were those, far too stronger than these, which made the Musalmans of India realise that its future was entirely and absolutely wedded with the continuance of British connection with India. If there were fanatics here and there who could mislead a few loyal subjects of His Majesty, there were potentates and religious leaders who could wield an influence over millions of their co-religionists to keep them on the right side.

The Nizam of Hyderabad, the foremost Muslim Ruler in India issued a *Farman* in which he said :—

“Let it be generally known that at this critical

juncture it is the bounden duty of the Mahomedans of India to adhere firmly to their old and tried loyalty to the British Government especially when there is no Moslem or non-Moslem power in the world under which they enjoy such personal and religious liberty as they do in India and when, moreover, they are assured by the British Government that, as it has in the past always stood the best friend of Islam, so will it continue to be Islam's best friend and will always protect and cherish its Moslem subjects."

His Highness the Agha Khan, soon after the outbreak of the war, sent the following message to Indian Mahomedans and those of His Majesty's Dominions. "No Islamic interest was threatened in this war and our religion was not in peril. Nor was Turkey in peril, for the British and Russian Empires and the French Republic had offered solemnly to guarantee Turkey all her territories in complete independence, if she had remained in peace. Turkey was the trustee of Islam and the whole world was content to let her hold our holy cities in her keeping. Now that Turkey has so disastrously shown herself a tool in German hands, she has not only ruined herself, but has lost her position of trustee of Islam and evil will overtake her. Turkey has been persuaded to draw the sword in an unholy cause from which she could be but ruined, whatever else happen, and she will lose her position as a great nation, for such mighty sovereigns

as the King-Emperor and the Tsar (?) can never be defeated.

Thousands of Muslims are fighting for their Sovereign already, and all men must see that Turkey has not gone to war for the cause of Islam or for the defence of her independence. Thus our only duty as Muslims now is to remain loyal, faithful and obedient to our temporal and secular allegiance."

At a meeting held in Bhopal further evidence of Mahomedan loyalty was given by the greatest Muslim lady Ruler in India who, in the course of her address, said :—

"I have every hope that my subjects will show their constomary zeal in carrying out my wishes and I have no doubt but they will follow me and my ancestors and predecessors as well as their own forbears in remaining firm in their loyalty and devotion to the British Crown."

Their Highnesses the Nawabs of Rampur, Tonk and Palanpur issued special firmans enjoining upon their Muslim subjects staunch adherence to the British. Similarly the Council of the All-India Muslim League which is the only important political institution of Indian Musalmans in India adopted the following resolution :—

"(1) The Council of the All-India Muslim League gives expression once more to the deep rooted loyalty and sincere devotion of the Musalmans of India to the

British Crown and assures His Excellency the Viceroy that the participation of Turkey in the present war does not and cannot affect that loyalty and devotion in the least degree and the Council is confident that no Musalman in India would swerve even to a hair's breadth from his paramount duty to his sovereign.

(2) The Council of the All-India Muslim League expresses its deep gratitude to the British-Government for the assurance given to its Muslim subjects as to the immunity of the holy places of Islam in Arabia and other places from attack or molestation and for obtaining similar assurances from its Allies."

Nawab Fatch Ali Khan Kazilbash wrote "we are all as firm in our allegiance to the Throne of England as the unchanging rock."

Thus it will appear that the Rulers of Musalman States, the leaders of Muslim opinion in British India and every other Musalman whose opinion carried any weight impressed upon the general Musalman population of India, the necessity and the benefits of continuing firm in their loyalty to Great Britain.

These exhortations on the part of leaders of Muslim opinion were not merely sentimental. They were based on close reasoning and on unassailable grounds. They knew that England had always been a staunch friend of the Musalmans and of Turkey. It were the intrigues and pressure of Germany and Austria which had led the Ottoman Empire into a needless war

against Great Britain. What interest the Central Powers had in Turkey has been explained in a preceding chapter. From the Press Communique issued by the Government of India only a day previous to the declaration of war between Great Britain and Turkey it was clear that Great Britain did her best to avoid this event. The Communique detailed the Turkish attacks on Odessa and Russian ships and indicated the consistently aggressive attitude of Turkey at German instigation. The purchase by Turkey of the German men of war, the *Goeben* and *Breslau* was followed by the sowing of mines in the Dardanelles. Great Britain did not take seriously even the unfriendly treatment by responsible Turkish officials in Baghdad and Mesopotamia of British subjects and the open incitement of the population by the Turkish official circles against Great Britain and the Allies. What His Majesty's Government did was that it intimated that if Turkish were substituted for German crews on the *Goeben* and *Breslau*, if British merchant shipping were not impeded and if Turkey would honorably carry out the duties of a neutral state not only would all these illegalities and hostile acts be overlooked but that a solemn and written guarantee would be given that Great Britain would scrupulously respect the independence and integrity of the Ottoman Empire. Further on, assurances were given that at the conclusion of peace Great Britain would see that no conditions

were laid down which would impair that independence and integrity and that economic conditions of a character favourable to Turkey would be obtained. In spite of these assurances the attitude of Turkey towards Great Britain became increasingly provocative. The Press Communique went on to describe military preparations in Syria obviously designed to facilitate an attack on Egypt. German intrigues were set on foot in Syria, Egypt and elsewhere with a view to inciting the people to take part in the conflict and reports were even received of the despatch of Turkish emissaries to India with the object of stirring up anti-British feelings among Indian Mahomedans. The Communique concluded by saying "Great Britain, the greatest Mahomedan Power in the world and the faithful and consistent friend of Turkey whom she has steadfastly helped to maintain her position in Europe and to recover her stability which was shaken in the Balkan war would see with the greatest regret that Turkey had been decoyed into ranging herself on the side of England's enemies and into adopting an attitude as unjustified as it would be ungrateful but it cannot be denied that the present situation shows that there is a chauvinistic element endeavouring to drive Turkey into war with England for the benefit of Germany and of Austria, the secular enemy of the Turkish State."

An official white paper was published later on

which contained a record of the efforts of Germany to corrupt the Muslims and afforded the indisputable testimony of Great Britain's patience, despite Turko-German acts of provocation and intrigues.

It will appear from the above that England realising her position as the greatest Muslim Power in the world, was and had ever been a friend of the Sultan of Turkey. If further evidence in support of this fact is required the following quotation from Lord Hardinge's speech in the Indian Legislative Council in January, 1915, will furnish the same. Said His Excellency :—

“ I believe I am not wrong in saying that this is the first occasion in History that the British Empire has been at war with Turkey. As you are all aware, in the Cremean War England expended freely her blood and treasure to maintain the integrity of Turkey while nearly 25 years later the disastrous treaty of San Stefano which would have destroyed Turkish power in Europe was annulled solely by the threatened intervention of Great Britain. Since those days the policy of the British Government, as I am personally able to bear witness, has been to endeavour to strengthen the position of Turkey and to induce her to take safety from internal danger and external menace by the introduction of much needed reforms into her administration. The advice of England, though frequently unpalatable, was at least disinterested...when



it (the war) broke out England had no quarrel of any kind with Turkey and the British Government simply expected of the Turkish Government of their observance of the ordinary principles of international law and the elementary duties of a neutral power." His Excellency then mentioned the acts of the Turkish Government which clearly meant breaches of neutrality and said :—" From these incidents it was clear that our patience was misunderstood, that a powerful party in Turkey dominated by German influence was bent on war and that they meant to go on from outrage to outrage till war was provoked." His Excellency then described how England and the Allies persuaded Turkey not to embark on this dangerous path, how the Allies gave, more than once, solemn assurances to respect the independence and integrity of Turkey. He mentioned the length to which the Allies went in making the declaration they made that the holy places of Mesopotamia and Arabia were to be immune from their attacks and the British Government even declared that they were prepared, if any such need arose, to defend them against all foreign invaders and to maintain them *inviolable*.

Such a generous attitude of the British Government towards Turkey could not be misunderstood by the Musalmans of India. No wonder, therefore, that the Mahomedan population of India was, throughout the war, thoroughly loyal to the British Govern-

ment and it spared no pains in helping Great Britain in the prosecution of the war. Musalmans of military classes such as Baluchis, Pathans and others joined the ranks of the army willingly and in large numbers and fought against not only Germans and Austrians but against the very Turks with a gallantry worthy of their ancient traditions. The Lieutenant-Governor of the Punjab analysed the number of combatants supplied by the Punjab and the Punjabi Musalmans occupied the foremost place in the list, *viz.*, their number was 170,000 out of a total of 390,000. The fact is worth mentioning that the first Indian soldier to receive the Victoria Cross for conspicuous gallantry in the field of battle was a Musalman, Khudadad Khan of the 129th Baluchis. In the subscriptions to the War Loans and to the numerous War Funds Musalmans took their share willingly and quite in proportion to their pecuniary condition which is, by no means, very satisfactory.

While speaking of the attitude of the Indian Musalmans towards the war, the names of the two Muslim brothers who have remained interned at one place or another throughout the war, *viz.*, Messrs Mahomed Ali and Shaukat Ali, must be mentioned. The Government of India regard these two brothers as dangerous to society, although no convincing reasons for that suspicion have ever been vouchsafed by the Government. So far as their attitude towards Turkey and England is concerned, the following

extract which has been taken from the report of an interview which a representative of the Press had with the Hon'ble the Raja of Mahmudabad who had visited the two brothers at the place of their internment in October, 1915, will speak for itself:—

“ I, then, enquired whether he as a nationalist would prefer a foreign Government to the autonomy under the *aegis* of the British Crown as defined by two such important political organisations as the All-India Moslem League and the Indian National Congress. He (Mr. Mahomed Ali) said that his ideal was the same as that of the All-India Moslem League and the Indian National Congress and that he did not want any outside power, whether Islamic or not, to be in possession of India. To this he himself added that if, for example, Turkey advanced towards the frontiers with the intention of invading India, then he, as a nationalist, would be prepared to enlist in the forces of his country and fight against and repel the invaders. ‘ I need not add,’ continued the Raja Sahib, ‘ that what Mr. Mahomed Ali said had the cordial concurrence of Mr. Shaukat Ali.’



## CHAPTER XI.

---

### The Services of the Indian Press.

*I should like to take this opportunity of paying a tribute to the manner in which the Press, both Indian and Anglo-Indian, has been conducted in the face of considerable difficulties during the past few months. It is common knowledge that in England, and I may add in America, there has been a good deal of recrimination about the vagaries of the censorship and I have reason to know that in India too there has been some irritation against that much abused person, the censor. But the Press has, to a large extent recognised that his task is a hard one and has exercised moderation and patience. Similarly these months have been a time when rumour has been busy with every form of false report and when it would have been easy to have done great mischief by giving wide publicity to idle tales in the columns of the daily papers. With a very few exceptions to which I need not refer in detail the Press of India has exercised wisdom, restraint and moderation and I feel that we all owe to it an expression of gratitude. It has been suggested that the exceptions to which I have referred are sufficiently serious to demand a more drastic press law during this time of war, for at*

*present no action can be taken against an offending paper until the mischief has been done. We are, however, opposed to taking any further powers in this direction unless the necessity is absolutely forced upon us for the exceptions to the good conduct of the Press as a whole have not so far been sufficient to justify anything of the nature of a pre-censorship and I, for one, should regard it as a grave misfortune if the errors of a few should bring a stigma upon the Press of India which, speaking generally, has been wisely and loyally conducted during these difficult times.*

LORD HARDINGE IN JANUARY, 1915.

*In these efforts (viz., those made by the government for the diffusion of correct information about the war) we have been ably seconded by the Press of India to whose hearty co-operation our success is largely due.*

LORD CHELMSFORD IN FEBRUARY, 1919.

The 20th century has been correctly described by a writer as being pre-eminently the century of the Press. In England the Press is generally spoken of as the fourth estate of the Realm. But it is more than that. Today the Public Newspaper Press wields an influence envied by even the most successful and popular of statesmen and ministers. It is a common place to say that the newspaper Press is the organised and organising expression of public opinion. Now in these days of progressive democracy, a government, before every

thing else, has to ascertain the trend of public opinion in order perhaps to shape it, at any rate to follow it. The newspaper Press might not, in any one case, be the express image of the view of the majority of the public to which it ministers and whose welfare it aspires to seek but in its variety and in its multitude it after all gives those who govern the best means they can have of gauging and appreciating the public opinion of the moment. One can ask where would have England or France or America or India been in this war had there not been in existence the newspaper Press in these countries. Specially in India, things would have, in that case, assumed a shape quite the reverse of desirable. A section of the British Press having been taken to task severely for its attitude towards the Government during the war a writer in *John Bull* essayed sometime ago, the task of vindicating it and made the following categorical enumeration of what, in his opinion, were the services that the Press had rendered to the country by its policy of independent patriotism.

‘ It was the Press which warned the nation of the coming war.

‘ It was the Press which brought Kitchener to the War Office.

‘ It was the Press which got rid of Haldane.

‘ It was the Press which revealed the munitions muddle.

- ' It was the Press which saved recruiting.
- ' It was the Press which floated the War Loan.
- ' It was the Press which interned the aliens.
- ' It was the Press which stopped Germans of military age from returning to their country.
- ' It was the Press which made cotton contraband.
- ' It was the Press which stopped the transfer of gold to Germany.
- ' It was the Press which degraded the Kaiser from the Order of the Garter.
- ' It was the Press which formed the Coalition.

Whether the English Press has correctly claimed the credit of the foregoing events is a matter of opinion, but there can be no two opinions about the fact that in these days the Press is capable of doing anything and specially in the war its influence has been simply tremendous.

The Press in India is neither so free nor so influential as it is in England or other democratic countries. The Press Act does not allow independently honest criticism of the acts and measures of the Indian Government. It is one of the duties and functions of the newspaper Press to write every now and then against the acts of commission and omission of the executive government if it is to faithfully fulfil its primary and essential obligation to the people; and yet the same Executive Government in India has assumed the function of punishing the Press legitimately belonging to a judicial tribunal properly and

lawfully constituted. In spite of these drawbacks and difficulties the newspaper Press of India was able to discharge its duties in connection with the war in a manner which cannot too highly be praised. As has been said above, in a country like India 93 percent of whose population is illiterate, the situation might have easily become perilous had there been no newspapers. In such a country dame rumour finds a very fertile place to grow on and thrive. It emanates from some source, real or imaginative, in the shape of a small plant or even as a seedling and by going the round of illiterate persons it assumes an unrecognisable shape, it grows into a monster tree. Several examples might be quoted. The writer remembers that a vernacular paper in the beginning of the war announced the news that London (a small town in Germany or France, not London the metropolis of the world) was invaded. He heard a few days later from an illiterate friend and he (the friend) could swear most solemnly for the authenticity of the news which he had heard from a friend of a cousin of his who had read it in a newspaper that "*ab kja hai, sahib, jab London par hi hamla hogaya*" "what is there left now, Sir, when London itself has been invaded." Similarly when Russia collapsed and news came from Europe that there was every likelihood in the near future of the Indian borders being invaded by the enemy, the illiterate people believed that the enemy was actually somewhere near Rawalpindi



or Peshawar and would soon come down upon Delhi. Once again ; Gurkha soldiers were seen patrolling on duty in some principal towns and the ignorant folk at once concluded that the British army had left India bag and baggage and it had been substituted by the Japanese forces. (To the unpractised eye there is little to distinguish a Gurkha from a Japanese soldier). The most important function of the newspaper Press in India during the war was to counteract and correct such mischievous rumours as found currency either owing to the ignorance or misunderstanding of illiterate people or which were deliberately set afloat by interested and selfish persons either Germans, English or Indians. How successfully the newspaper Press in India discharged this onerous function has been admitted by Lords Hardinge and Chelmsford themselves.

It is a bare truth to say that to the newspaper Press belongs the largest credit of the triumphal conclusion of the war. But for the Press it would have been difficult to raise such large forces in the country. The spirit of patriotism and loyalty was, no doubt, present in India in an ample degree but it required rekindling and who could do it if not the Press and the platform. A platform speaker can only influence the hundreds or the thousands of one particular locality that attend his speech but a newspaper has a much wider sphere to influence. There was hardly a newspaper in India but appealed to the people to

their sense of patriotism and loyalty every day in its columns. Ignorant Indians thought that the war was a European war, that India was not in danger and so long as it was safe it was none of their business to do anything with it. They were told by the Press, however, that the cause of England was the cause of the British Empire, the cause of the British Empire was the cause of India, that India would be nowhere if the British Empire were fallen. People were told incessantly that the future of India was absolutely wedded with the future of Great Britain and the British Empire. They were told that the war was not a mere geographical war, was not a war between certain powers of Europe and America but it was a war between right and evil, between justice and wrong, between democracy and antocracy, between liberty and despotism, between the principles of self-determination and self-aggrandisement. They were told and rightly so that England and her allies represented the former principles and the Central Powers the latter. They were told how Germany tyrannised over and misruled her subject populations, they were told that the German colonies resented the German Government, bad as it was. They were made to understand what their fates would be if Germany came to rule over them. How in that case their persons and property would become unsafe, how they would be maltreated, how the honor of their womenfolk which

was the dearest possession of theirs would be violated. They were told how the Germans would exploit India, how they would turn the Industries and Agriculture of India to their own advantage and to the disadvantage of the labourers and agriculturists of India. They were told incessantly that Germans do not at all respect the religious or moral scruples of a nation and that their temples and mosques would be violated. It was, in this way, by constant lecturing, by writing and speaking that the general masses of India came forward to help the country and the Empire in this hour of grave crisis.

The first need of the Empire was the recruitment of combatants and labourers. In this, the Press played its part nobly and creditably. The advantages of joining the army were explained with pardonable exaggeration, the disadvantages, if any, were minimised. The likely recruits were reminded now and then of the deeds of valour of the ancient heroes of India. The names of Arjun and Sivaji, and Rana Pratap had constantly to be repeated. The terms of recruitment were clearly explained, the battle fronts were described in an attractive manner and so on and so forth. The result was that recruits for the army flocked to the recruiting depots not in hundreds and thousands but in lakhs. It is not to be inferred, of course, that the newspaper Press alone was responsible for such a successful result but surely if the credit is to be divided

the share of the Press would, by no means, be a mean share.

The newspaper Press not only said ditto to the Government's schemes of recruiting but, as it was expected to do, it suggested to the Government, now and then, other measures which should have been taken in order to encourage recruiting. It was the Press which checked the actions of overzealous Government officials to get recruits almost by compulsion. If their actions had remained unnoticed or unchecked there certainly would have arisen serious difficulties in further recruitment. It was the Press which kept on the question of increase in the pay of sepoys always to the front, so that recruits might join the colors willingly and in large numbers. The Press eulogised the services and the sacrifices of the soldiers who went to the front and fought on the battlefields in order that their examples might be emulated by others on a still larger scale. Was not the Press again which agitated for the grant of King's commissions in the Indian army to qualified persons so that men of respectable families might take to the profession of a soldier instead of that of a clerk? The Government's promise of granting these commissions to suitable persons led many a hesitating person to join the army. The entire newspaper Press of India, Anglo-Indian and Indo-Anglian, Vernacular and Anglo-Vernacular, Political, Social or Economical was unanimous

in its attitude towards recruitment of sepoys for the army; Mrs. Besant's and Mr. Tilak's organs being no exceptions. Anglo-Indian newspapers or certain biassed Government officials at one time tried to misrepresent the views of these papers but such a policy of theirs was as unjust as it was unwise. They did so not because they believed that these papers wanted to discourage recruiting but because they wanted to create a prejudice against the foremost advocates of the Home Rule policy for India. Certain Anglo-Indian papers advocated conscription for both Europeans and Indians when the war situation became, in April, 1918, extremely perilous and being alarmed at what was believed to be a serious situation certain Indian papers, notably the *Bengalee* whose editor is the Hon'ble Babu Surrendra Nath Banerji, followed suit and recommended conscription for Indians, although under certain conditions. The motive of these Indian papers, in recommending such a measure, was quite understandable as they were anxious to save India from a German or a Russian invasion at any cost and at any sacrifices, however big. They were carried away by their zeal but the very overwhelming majority of the Indian newspapers deprecated such an imprudent step and the latter were able to influence the Government in not embarking upon such a hazardous experiment. If the Government of India or any local Government had adopted such a measure, it might have resulted

in consequences which need not be explained here, as once the illiterate and ignorant masses had come to know of compulsion, they would have declined to give any help whatsoever to the Government or would have taken some undesirable step. The Newspaper Press saved the situation.

Take again the financial contributions. The Government could not have been able to do even a thousandth part of what it was able to achieve without the help of the newspaper Press. For money even conscription would have failed if the newspaper Press were non-existent or opposed to financial assistance being rendered by the country. It was the Press which popularised the War Loan to such an extent that it was successful beyond even the most sanguine expectations. Perhaps the press was at its best when it popularised the War Loan. Day in and day out every newspaper devoted several columns to propaganda work in connection with this loan. Not only it published long lists of investments daily, whether they belonged to the Post Office or the main section but it devoted considerable space in its editorial columns to create enthusiasm thereanent. The writer was, at that time, the editor of an important Vernacular paper and consequently he can speak with knowledge how the various papers competed with each other as to who writes the most with regard to the political and economic advantages of investment in the War Loan. There was a

very healthy competition in another way. Every provincial paper wanted to see its own province taking a favourable position. Bombay and Calcutta newspapers did their utmost to see their own towns occupying the first place. No wonder, therefore, that there was a rivalry between the *Bengalee* and the *Bombay Chronicle*, between the *Leader* and the *Tribune* and so on.

In connection with the War Loan the Indian newspaper Press helped the Government in yet another way. Not only it did the propaganda work in its editorial columns, not only it spread enthusiasm throughout the country by opening its valuable columns to the reports of propaganda work, not only it persuaded the hesitating public to invest their savings in the loan by admiring, sometimes even in exaggerated language, the examples of those who had already given loans but most of the newspapers published War Loan advertisements at considerably reduced rates—sometimes even half rates. There were papers also which, placing the needs of the Empire at this critical stage above their own self-interest, gave publicity to such advertisements absolutely free of cost. In connection with the 'Our Day' fund the realisations of which amounted to about double of what was expected Her Excellency Lady Chelmsford herself acknowledged the services of the Press in the following message :—

DEAR SIR,

I desire to write and thank you most sincerely for

all the assistance you have recently given to the cause of 'Our Day' in the columns of your paper. The Press in India has been more than generous in helping the Central and Provincial Committees in the work on which they have been engaged for many weeks past and personally I am deeply grateful for the valuable aid your journal has given us all in our efforts to try and raise funds for the Red Cross and the troops in Mesopotamia. I know well how much of our success has been due to the generosity and assistance of the Press.

*December, 21.*

I am, yours truly,

FRANCES CHELMSFORD.

There was yet another way in which the Indian Newspapers served the Empire. The representatives of the Indian Newspaper Press did not content themselves merely to cater to the reading world news of the war as received through news agencies and explain them fully in the pages of their journals but several of them went to the actual battlefields to see things with their own eyes and to describe them later on in their journals to the benefit of the readers. The first deputation went to Mesopotamia in 1917 and in 1918, another and this time more representative, deputation travelled as far as France and England at considerable sacrifice to the members.



“ You can tell the people in England that India will respond to every call and use every opportunity to assist the Empire in the great fight for justice. This was the message,” wrote the *Sunday Times* on October 13th 1918, “brought from the Indian Empire to this country by the first delegation of Indian journalists who have just arrived in London on a five weeks’ visit under the auspices of the Ministry of Information”. One of the delegates, in an interview, said. ‘There is a complete harmony of feeling between India and the rest of the British-Empire regarding the War. We, in India, are anxious to do as much as we can according to the opportunities offered’. The same gentleman stated that a number of representative gentlemen of practically all shades of opinion in India who attended at a farewell function had asked him to take the following message to the king. “We trust that you will be privileged to see the battlefields in France where the tide of the German invasion was stemmed in the early months of the war. We request you to assure His Majesty the King that India’s part in the war has been and continues to be willing and spontaneous and that if we had been properly and fully equipped in industrial and military matters our help would have been far greater than it has been. If even now Indians are fully admitted to His Majesty’s Commissions in the army like Englishmen are and if the resources of the

country are organised the British Empire will acquire such an additional strength that no power will lightly think of going to war with it. We hope that as the result of your visit to England, British statesmen will look at India not as the whiteman's burden but as a willing partner in the Empire, anxious to share all responsibility if only she be deemed as a real partner.

The patriotism of the masses in India is undoubted. Even the magnificent services of the Indian Princes pale into insignificance compared with the sacrifices the people have already made and are still willing to make."

Needless to say that the Press delegates faithfully delivered this message to the King and to the people of Great Britain and thus made the cement which joins India with the rest of the British Empire still stronger—a great service to the Empire.

The delegates visited the British Fleet, they inspected munitions works, ship-building yards, cotton mills at several places and other manufacturing industries.

Here is Mr. G. K. Devadhar's (one of the representatives) brief description of what the deputation did during their tour.

"During the first week of our stay in London, we were shown the London Docks and the ware-houses of London Port Authority; we were taken over London in a big Handley-Page machine and flew to the height

of 32,000 ft going at the rate of 60 miles per hour. On the 19th of October we were individually given an audience by both the King and the Queen at the Buckingham Palace. During this period we were shown the ' Illustrated London News ' Press, the Stamp Department and the printing of Government Currency Notes.

On the 20th of October, we left London on a provincial tour, visiting Edinburgh, Glasgow, Carlisle, Chester (Port Sunlight), Manchester and Birmingham. While at Edinburgh, among other things, we were shown a considerable portion of the Grand Fleet, lying near the Firth-of-Forth; at Glasgow we were shown, on the Clyde, the ship-building operations for the Government by the John Brown Co. airship and munition factories at George Town; the Corporation showed us the several important Municipal departments; at Carlisle; we were shown the work of the Board of Liquor Control; near the Chester we were shown the model labour conditions put into operation by the Lever Bros. on their huge soap works at Port Sunlight; at Manchester the Ship Canal Co. showed us the big canal and their warehouses and other activities. Among other things, we were shown a model spinning mill, shell factory, the Royal Exchange, and the whole-sale Co-operative Society's operations; and at Birmingham we were shown workshops of the Metropolitan Carriage Co. at present engaged in making the

Handley-Page machines and the tanks. We were given the opportunity of going in a tank.

We returned to London on the 30th of October. After a couple of days' stay here, we were taken to the Western front where we received the hospitality of military officers. We spent six days in seeing the ruins of several Belgian and French towns and villages, visiting most of the important places where battles were fought in that area. During this brief stay we travelled over 900 miles in motor cars. It was very cold there. We were shown three prominent theatres of war, where our troops fought most valiantly, for which the British Army officers and the public have expressed their admiration and gratitude. We saw most dreadful scenes of devastation and desolation, complete ruin of beautiful agricultural land and forest; we were shown an actual battle front where the guns were firing at the Germans, Huns as they are universally called here, who were at the distance of three miles. Our visit to this place has left a deep impression on my mind.

On our return to London, we saw, on the 9th of November, the Lord Mayor's show one of the grandest held, in which troops from all Allied countries except India (because there were no Indian troops at that time in England) and the different War activities of the nation were marshalled. We saw also the great crowd, buoyant and maddening, of people—men and

women in all public places in London on the day when the news of the signing of the Armistice flashed over the whole country.

In London itself we were the guests of several institutions and public bodies at lunch or dinner; besides, many important gentlemen treated us at luncheons; moreover several receptions were arranged to honour us, the Secretary of State's being one of them. Among other places of interest, we paid a visit to Hampton Court, Windsor Castle, and 6 Oxford Colleges.

At most of these places, generous sentiments were expressed in appreciation of India's contribution in men and money to the Empire during the War and we were asked to respond to the toasts of welcome. There seems to be a universal feeling of gratitude for what India has done and I feel sure that this has materially contributed to the desirable change in the angle of vision of the Britishers towards her. If India will persist in her demand, on right lines, she is sure to succeed. There is great need for work here."

The greatest service rendered by the Indian Press, more particularly the organs of the views of educated Indians, is yet to be mentioned. This section of the Indian Press which consisted of such daily papers as the *Bengalee* and the *Amrita Bazar Patrika* of Bengal, the *Leader* of the United Provinces, the *Tribune* of the Punjab, the *Bombay Chronicle* of Bombay, the *Hindu*

and the *New India* of Madras, not to speak of numerous other journals which were not dailies and of the vernacular Press which is no less influential, did the greatest service to the Empire by keeping before the public eye both sides of the shield. It asked the people to perform their duties willingly and unflinchingly and well and it did not hesitate to give the same advice to the Government. If the Government was keen on insisting upon its rights, the Press asked the people to demand their rights as well, though not as a condition to assist in the prosecution of the war. No nation in the world, unless every member of it was a fool or a philanthropist can undergo large sacrifices unless it expected something in return. If the Indian leaders and the Indian Press had gone on asking the people to make sacrifices and yet greater sacrifices without demanding for them anything out of the results it can easily be imagined that their appeals would have fallen flat on the country. A million and a quarter of soldiers could not have gone to the war, and the financial assistance could not have been what it actually was. The Indian press kept the flame of hope burning in the hearts of the people. It demanded the grant to qualified Indians of King's Commissions in the army so that better men could come forward to join the Imperial army. It demanded increase in the emoluments of the sepoys so that those who were hesitating might join at once. Lastly, it

inspired the people to spend the last pie of their purses and the last drop of their blood to win the war which was being fought by England and her allies in the cause of justice, liberty, freedom and for the security of the rights of weaker nations. It taught the people that the war was being fought for the emancipation of the entire world including India and hence it demanded the application of these principles in the administration of India. Surely if the nation were not led to believe that its sacrifices would lead to the emancipation of itself is it conceivable that it would have responded so magnificently as it has actually done? Let the reactionaries in India and in England say what they will, it was this section of the Press which deserves the greatest credit in the bringing about of such a happy result.

It can be imagined that proprietors and editors of Indian newspapers were able to render so much service only at considerable sacrifice, personal and financial. The Press Act and the Defence of India Act were always hanging over their heads like the sword of Damocles threatening to fall any moment. They had to write with excessive caution and sometimes they grievously felt that they were not doing all they could. A great personal pain, indeed! The War again had raised the prices of every thing in connection with newspaper printing to an abnormal extent. The price of paper alone went up more than three times

the pre-war figures and similar was the case with other printing materials. Many of the newspapers had to suspend publication, being unable to face this abnormal rise in prices. Many others had to curtail their size and volume and almost every newspaper had to raise its price during the war. The circulation of newspapers increased considerably in the beginning of the war, but when the curiosity for news waned, and the price of paper went up, the circulation began to decline and considering the prevailing high prices of every article of necessity there is no wonder that the circulation of many a newspaper fell below even the pre-war figure.

In a word, it must be said that the services of the Indian Press were most valuable and the sacrifices immense. But for the right attitude of the Press India's help could not possibly have been so splendid.





## CHAPTER XX.

### The Educated and Political Classes and the War.

We turn next to the intellectual ideal of loyalty; of this the educated classes are the custodians. In addition to their traditional attachment to the monarch, intensified by an appreciation of the virtues and sympathy with India of the Royal House of England, they are loyal to the British Crown because they see that under the aegis of that Crown the destinies of India will best be fulfilled. It is the duty of educated class in India to instil in the mind of the less educated whose instinctive and traditional loyalty is in danger of being shaken in these days of educational progress and individualism, the true ideal of loyalty. They have done great work in this direction. Those who freely criticised the administration in time of peace and called for further political development, have now raised their voices equally loudly in preaching the imperative need for co-operation with Government. They are actively engaged in the collection of funds for the relief of the suffering and distress caused by the war; in urging the avoidance of controversial topics for



*I do not hesitate to say that I am loyal to the British Throne because I love my country.*

THE HON'BLE PANDIT M. M. MALAVIYA.



*the present and in maintaining themselves and convincing the people that India's connection with England is the political condition conducive to the country's welfare and that any help that India can give now is not only a contribution to the cause of right and justice, but like all such gifts, will tend to the permanent advantage of the country when accounts are adjusted at the close of this colossal struggle. They are, in brief, acting as the keepers of the nation's mind and conscience. They are cheerfully doing this from the conviction that, apart from the material interests associated with the indissoluble tie which links India with England, their action is sanctioned by laws of justice and humanity. Products of English education, they are maintaining in practice the moral principles which they imbibed with that education; these, united with the inborn ideals of Indian ethical truths, make their influence the more appreciable.*

SIR P. D. PATTANI.

It is impossible to draw a hard and fast line between the educated and political classes on the one hand and the remaining population on the other. The Maharaja of Bikaner or the Maharaja of Patiala is as educated as any ordinary educated Indian and takes as much interest in politics as any politician in British

India. Have not a number of Ruling Princes expressed their sympathy and support, nay, given active help to their British-Indian fellow countrymen, in the realisation of the latter's political aspirations and have they not demanded political rights and privileges for themselves? Are not landholders such as the Maharajas of Bobbilee, Burdwan, Durbhanga and Balrampur politicians? Do they not sit in Councils, take part in political meetings and express their views on Indian political problems? But, strangely enough, the phrase 'educated and political classes' has acquired a special meaning in this country and this class has often been made the target of adverse criticism at the hands of certain classes of people Indian, Anglo-Indian and British. It has been said more than once, although by irresponsible persons, that the political leaders have shown but a lukewarm interest in the war; on the other hand, they took advantage of the embarrassed position of England in order to agitate for political rights for their own country. Such a sweeping accusation is as unjust as it is wrong. But for the Press which is in the hands of these very people and the platform which is solely possessed by them it would have been simply impossible for India to put in such conspicuous services in the war as she has been able to do. In a separate chapter it has been shown to what extent the Indian Newspaper Press

has been able to influence the people to render all possible help to the Empire. Most of what has been said in that chapter is, *mutatis mutandis*, applicable to the case of educated Indians also. They addressed public meetings in order to appeal for recruits, they subscribed to war loans and persuaded their countrymen to do the same. It was a member of the educated and political class who moved the resolution in the Indian Legislative Council regarding the expenses of the Indian Expeditionary Force which fought outside India against Europeans for the first time.

The fact is that no community in India rendered greater service to the Empire during the war than the educated and political class. The services of the Ruling Chiefs, the fighting races, the commercial community and the Government officials were great, no doubt, but they could not have achieved anything substantial without the co-operation and lead of the educated Indians. In an excellent article contributed to the press in the beginning of the war by the Hon'ble Sir P. S. Sivaswami Iyer, K. C. S. I., C. I. E., Member, Executive Council, Madras, the attitude of the educated class has been correctly explained. Says he :—

“The voices that are heard in the Press and on the platform, in councils and associations, are the voices of the educated classes. They realize more clearly than the rest of their countrymen the gravity of the issues at stake and the menace to liberty,

humanity and civilization implied in the ascendancy of German militarism. Keen as the most advanced political reformer may be about progress, he knows that it is impossible for him to achieve his political ideal of a united India governed on constitutional lines, except under the fostering care of the nation which has set the example of political freedom and ordered progress to the rest of the world. The educated Indian is the product of British rule, and he owes everything that distinguishes him from the mass of his countrymen to the boon of English education which has broadened his mental outlook and imbued him with higher ideals and aspirations. His loyalty is not the merely instinctive loyalty of the Briton at home or the Colonial, but the outcome of gratitude for benefits conferred and of the conviction that the progress of India is indissolubly bound up with the integrity and solidarity of the British Empire. The loyalty of the Colonial is the loyalty of a petted child who is assiduously kept in good humour and cannot stand the strain of the slightest attempt at dictation or interference by the Mother Country, be it in the matter of the treatment of Asiatic immigrants or the question of tariffs or any other question. The educated Indian, on the other hand, knows that for as long a time as the practical politician need look into, the British connection is necessary to secure him against internal

disorder and external aggression. The suspension of all political agitation in the country is proof of the desires of the educated classes to say or do nothing that may cause the least embarrassment to the Government. It is not that the carping critic of Government, the radical Indian doctrinaire, and the political missionary have, to use the language of the '*Times*' History of the War, been silenced, discountenanced or converted by the millions but that far more than the millions these various classes of critics have always realized that any weakening of the British Empire must affect the conditions necessary for the peaceful and steady development of an Indian nation. Agitation in peaceful times for political privileges is certainly not inconsistent with deep-seated loyalty. That the educated classes should desire to have a larger share in the direction of the administration or larger opportunities for the exercise of responsibility is not unnatural. How far such aspirations can or will be gratified is a question which the writer does not propose to consider."

It is not to be wondered at that the most advanced politician or Home Ruler is often the most loyal citizen of the British Empire. Sir Subramania Iyer of Madras, who sent a message to President Wilson of the United States of America requesting him to use his influence on the British statesmen for an early

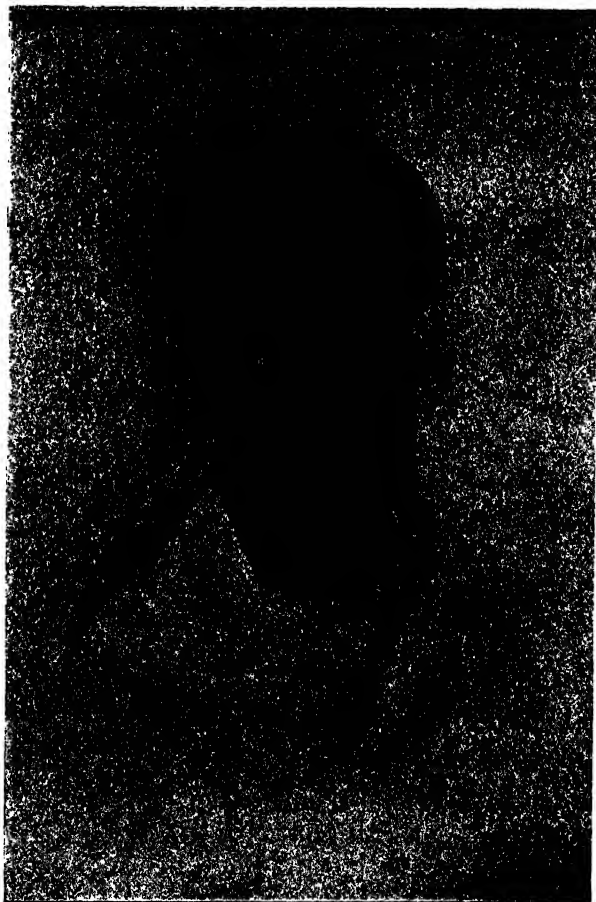


grant of responsible government to India, an action which was described as 'disgraceful' and 'senile' by the Secretary of State for India made the following speech at the outbreak of the war as President of the loyal demonstration in Madras.

"As we know the war is one which affects the safety of the Empire to which we belong, and is thus such as it were touching the person of every man, woman and child in India. Moreover it is not a struggle prompted by motives of aggrandisement but has been provoked by the flagrant breach of solemn engagements by a power which has for some years been a constant menace to the peace of Europe and a great part of the world. No wonder therefore that our Ruling Chiefs, Maharajas and Rajas are vying with each other in proclaiming their readiness to stand by and support their Sovereign, their Liege Lord and their personal friend ; and we, the people, should not in our turn lay behind in our duty. \*

\* \* Though this war will inflict incalculable harm on all the parties concerned, yet out of such evil good must come and will come. One of the advantages which India will gain may be said to have already accrued. For no one, however malicious he may be, will, in future, be able successfully to suggest doubts as to our loyalty to the Empire. No one can hereafter twist our representations, as to our wants and requirements as ebullitions





*At such a crisis it is, I firmly hold, the duty of every Indian, be he great or small, rich or poor, to support and assist His Majesty's Government to the best of his ability.*

B. G. TILAK,

of deep discontent and hidden disaffection. And this to my mind is no small advantage, as it will conduce to render the relation between the Indian people and great British nation one of true brotherliness."

Mr. Bal Gangadhar Tilak, perhaps the most uncompromising critic of the present Indian Administration in India wrote in the *Mahratta* on September 21st, 1914 :—

"It has been well said that British Rule is conferring inestimable benefit on India not only by its civilized methods of administration but also thereby bringing together the different nationalities and races of India, so that a united Nation may grow out of it in course of time. I do not believe that if we had any other rulers except the liberty-loving British, they would have conceived and assisted us in developing such a national ideal. Every one who has the interests of India at heart is fully alive to this and similar advantages of the British rule and the present crisis is, in my opinion, a blessing in disguise inasmuch as it has universally evoked our united feelings and sentiments of loyalty to the British Throne.

At such a crisis it is, I firmly hold, the duty of every Indian, be he great or small, rich or poor, to support and assist His Majesty's Government, to the best of his ability."

The following words are culled from the speeches of—not a Ruling Chief, nor an official but—Mr. M. K.

Gandhi of the passive resistance movement fame and much maligned by Anglo-Indian traders and certain government officials for his doings at Ahmadabad, Champaran and Khairā and who, later on, started the Satyagrah movement to combat what are popularly called the Rowlatt Bills.

"Absolutely unconditional and wholehearted cooperation with the Government on the part of educated India will bring us within sight of our goal as nothing else will." Again, "It is a perfectly honorable ambition to gain freedom for our country by fighting for the Empire." And yet again, "Not to help the Empire is to commit national suicide".

The Hon'ble Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya gave vent to the following views at a great meeting held at Allahabad.

"The destinies of our dear country are linked closely with the destinies of Great Britain. Any reverse to Britain means a serious menace to India. \* \* \* I do not hesitate to say that I am loyal to the British Throne because I love my country.

We are not blind to the fact that there are many defects in the existing system of administration, that there are many grievances which require to be redressed. \* \* \* But making allowance for that, I believe that no foreign nation, that I can think of, would have governed India better than, on the whole, the British have done. It is also our settled



*Not to help the Empire is to commit national suicide.*

M. K. GANDHI.



conviction that our progress under British rule will be far greater in the future than it has been in the past, and that a day will come, distant though it be at present, when India will, under the ægis of the British Crown, attain self-government such as the Dominion of Canada and the other self-governing Colonies of Britain enjoy."

His Highness the Agha Khan, an ex-President of the All-India Muslim League, was confident that the spirit of devotion would be maintained whatever fluctuations of war might occur before the Allies were victorious. The loyalty of the Indian Moslem to the King-Emperor was proof against any attempts of German Diplomacy to create a bastard pan-Islamic sentiment in favour of the "mailed fist."

There was no need to differentiate between various communities and races of India. All were united and eager to support the Imperial cause gratified that their national representatives were to assist in the European war for the first time in history.

This advance in the growth of Indian co-operation in the responsibilities of the Empire would be another great stone in the great landmark of the beneficent vicereignty. He was convinced that the war would definitely mark the watershed between the old and the new and in the common service and sacrifice there would be a way of permanent loving union between Indian and British sentiment and reconciliation in any outstanding divergencies on domestic matters.



Babu Bipen Chandra Pal who has been so severely dealt with by the Rowlatt Committee expressed the following opinion as late as 1918.

“ Everybody who counts in our present political life feels that the success of the German intrigues in Central Asia will bring not freedom to India, in any shape or form but will lead first to universal disorder and anarchy and then to another spell of a new foreign domination, either Moslem or Mongol or, in the alternative, it will break up the unity of India so laboriously built up by a hundred and fifty years and result in the parcelling out of the continent among various powers, Asiatic and European. And though, possibly, one or two Sovereign Indian States may emerge, either temporarily or permanently, out of this universal chaos, the hope of building up a great pan-Indian democracy which will be able to take up its rightful place in coming World history and World evolution will be killed practically for good.”

Many other public leaders can similarly be quoted here but for the purpose of this volume this is enough. This will help the reader to form a correct idea of the attitude of the educated and political classes. Some might say, have actually said, that the educated classes could only talk and do nothing substantial but there they are quite wrong. Take any sphere of service and the educated Indians will have to be given the greatest credit for its success.

Take, for instance, recruiting. Did not the educated classes explain from public platforms just as the newspapers did through their writings that India must help the Empire to the last man ? Who explained the advantages of saving the Empire by recruitment in large numbers ? Mr. Bal Gangadhar Tilak and Mr. M. K. Gandhi toured from village to village to collect recruits. When in May, 1918, the sudden collapse of Russia made the situation very gloomy and special appeals were made to India for more men and still more men, a war Conference was held at Delhi to concentrate the entire exertions of official and non-official Indians in one object, namely, to help the Empire, Mr. Gandhi threw himself heart and soul in the work of recruitment. "The Delhi Conference means for me," Mr. Gandhi declared in his letter to the Viceroy, "and I believe for many of us, a definite step in the consecration of our lives to the common cause." And ever as good as his word he wholly busied himself in the recruiting campaign. On May 15th, the Gujerat Sabha under his inspiration passed the following resolution :—

"In the opinion of the Sabha the easiest and straightest method of attaining Swarajya is to help the Empire in the hour of danger by supplying all available men for fighting and other purposes in connection with the war and therefore the Sabha resolved that it should, with all possible despatch, undertake

recruiting." The sentiment expressed in this resolution is only a paraphrase of what Mr. Gandhi himself said. "If we serve to save the Empire we have in that very act secured Home Rule."

Take again the financial contribution of the country. The part played by the educated Indians in this sphere of service is no less important. The resolution regarding the defraying of the expenses of the Indian Expeditionary Force by India was moved by a member of the educated class in the Indian Legislative Council and was supported by such stalwart politicians as the Hon'ble B. Surrendra Nath Banerji, the Hon'ble the Raja of Mahmudabad and others by speeches and by all by votes. Similarly, the gift of £100 million to England for war expenses was supported by all the members of the Council. The Hon'ble Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya was adversely criticised in this connection by some Anglo-Indian papers but their criticism was entirely misleading and based on wrong understanding. The Hon'ble Pandit, in the words of the *Leader*, "only made a formal motion" "proposing a reasonable modification of the arrangement announced in the speech of the Finance Member for making a suitable contribution to England towards the cost of the war." "We say advisedly" continued the *Leader* "a formal motion for it was not Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya's intention to stand in the way of the proposed gift (of £100 million) justified

as he would have been even if he had had that in mind, in view of the manner in which the whole arrangement was settled between the Government of India and His Majesty's Government as if it were a nice little family affair in which the non-official members of the Indian Legislative Council in their capacity of accredited representatives of the people were not in the least interested or concerned. This was done, too, at a time when the Legislative Council was in regular session."

An Anglo-Indian Newspaper, *the Madras Times*, truly remarked " what we regret, however, is that in this particular case of a contribution to the war, the contribution should have been a mere item in the budget over which the Council had no control, rather than a contribution that had been specially voted for by the Councillors. We believe the Councillors would have voted for it in accordance with Sir William (Meyer)'s scheme and it would have been a more real contribution from India than it is, at present."

The speech made by the Hon'ble Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya in moving his resolution bears testimony to the fact that his was only a formal resolution pointing out to the Government the impropriety of the procedure adopted by them. The Hon'ble Pandit announced the withdrawal of his resolution in his opening speech itself because he had never meant at all to stand in the way of the gift.

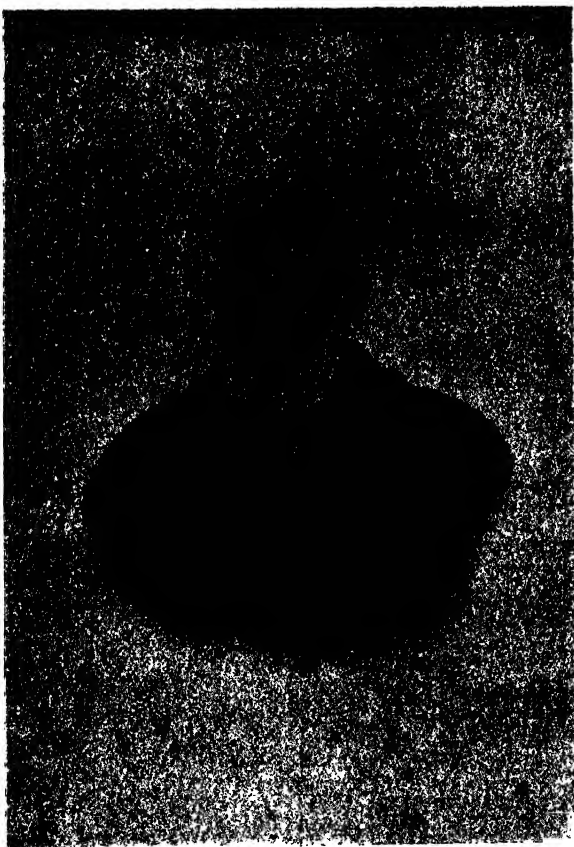
The Indian National Congress is the one political body which represents and gives expression to the views of the educated and political classes of India. In the Congress of 1914, first after the outbreak of the war, held in Madras under the distinguished presidentship of the Hon'ble Babu Bhupendra Nath Basu, the following resolutions were passed unanimously and with acclamation :—

IV (a)—That this Congress desires to convey to His Majesty the King-Emperor and the people of England its profound devotion to the Throne, its unswerving allegiance to the British connection and its firm resolve to stand by the Empire at all hazards and at all costs.

(b)—That this Congress places on record the deep sense of gratitude and enthusiasm which the Royal message addressed to the princes and people of India at the beginning of the war has evoked throughout the length and breadth of the country and which strongly illustrates His Majesty's solicitude and sympathy for them and strengthens the bond which unites the princes and peoples of India to his Royal House and the person of His Gracious Majesty.

V. That this Congress notes with gratitude and satisfaction the despatch of the Indian Expeditionary Force to the theatre of war and begs to offer to His Excellency the Viceroy its most heartfelt thanks for affording the people of India an opportunity of





*We desire to proclaim to the world that behind the serried ranks of one of the finest armies in the world there are multitudinous races, creeds and people in the world banded as one man and resolved to die in the defence of that great Empire to which we are all proud to belong and which is the symbol of human freedom justice, and civilisation wherever floats its flag.*

**HON'BLE MR. SURENDRA NATH BANERJEE.**

showing that as equal subjects of His Majesty they are prepared to fight shoulder to shoulder with the people of other parts of the Empire in defence of right and justice and the cause of the Empire.

The resolution No. IV was moved in presence of H. E. Lord Pentland, Governor of Madras, the first visit paid by a representative of the Crown to the Congress, by B. Surrendra Nath Banerjee, the tribune of the Nation. The mover eloquently voiced the loyalty of India, it being a fit time to declare it when the Empire was engaged in a titanic war. Dewan Bahadur L. A. Govindraghava Iyer seconded and spoke of the ingrained loyalty of the Hindu heart to which loyalty was part of religion. Sir P. M. Mehta, the Hon'ble Mr. S. B. Upasani, Pandit Gokaran Nath Misra, Mr. Har Kishen Lal, Mr. N. A. Dravid, Mr. Gopal Dass Chamatmal and Mr. Devadass all supported the resolution. The resolutions passed at the subsequent sessions of the Indian National Congress voiced the same feeling of loyalty and attachment and willingness, to stand by the Empire "at all hazards and at all costs."

Of course, like the Indian Newspaper Press the educated and the political classes pressed for political reforms with no less energy and earnestness than they pressed for service to the Empire. Short-sighted people might regard political agitation as an embarrassment to the Government or as discouragement of unconditional service or even as bargaining the loyalty



of the people but far-seeing statesmen were not slow to realise that a desire for the liberalisation of Indian Government was a direct outcome of the war. Did not the responsible statesmen of England herself declare times out of number that the war was being fought for the right of small nations and for the right of all people to rule their own destinies? The following paragraph from the Montagu-Chelmsford Report on Indian Constitutional Reforms justifies the agitation of the educated classes for self-determination or Home Rule.

“ Further the war has come to be regarded more and more clearly as a struggle between liberty and despotism, a struggle for the right of small nations and for the right of all people to rule their destinies. Attention is repeatedly called to the fact that, in Europe, Britain is fighting on the side of liberty and it is urged that Britain cannot deny to the people of India that for which she is herself fighting in Europe and in the fight for which she has been helped by India's blood and treasure. The revolution in Russia in its beginning was regarded in India as a triumph over despotism and notwithstanding the fact that it has since involved that unhappy country in anarchy and dismemberment, it has given impetus to Indian political aspirations. The speeches of English and American statesmen proclaiming the necessity for destroying German militarism and for conceding the

rights of self-determination to the nations have had much effect upon political opinion in India and have contributed to give new force and vitality to the demand of Self-Government which was making itself more widely heard among the progressive section of the people."

The following sentence taken from the same Report will show that if the Government had adopted a different attitude from the beginning of the war the agitation would have been much milder. "We imply no criticism upon the Government of the time when we say that in the light of subsequent events we are constrained to wonder whether a bolder policy from the outset of the war and franker inviting of India's co-operation in all forms of war efforts might not have done much to steady men's minds."



## CHAPTER XIII.

---

# The Services and Sacrifices of the Masses.

*I notice that by some thoughtful men a distinction is made between the loyalty of the Indian masses—the large volume of our villagers—and the educated classes. It is remarked that the loyalty of the former is passive and that of the latter active and more reasoned. Some have gone the extent of observing that villagers are indifferent as to who rules whether “Rama or Ravana”. I cannot subscribe to that observation. It is true that when the times were disturbed continually, peace was rare and the security of life and property was constantly threatened, the Indian villagers unaccustomed to organised and settled rule, thought of all rulers as alike and hence the proverbial tradition of putting Rama and Ravana on the same level. But a century and more of settled Government under the British has changed the villager's point of view and in the villages I have been to during the last six months I have met villagers expressing, in their own way, their keen sense of appreciation of British Rule and hating the very idea of a change of Government. In that respect the educated classes and the uneducated masses feel the same. It is no empty and conventional expression*

*to say that the war has brought the fine spirit and faith of India, both high and low, townsmen and villagers alike.*

SIR NARAYAN CHANDAVARKAR.

Of course, in a civilised country there is little to distinguish between the masses and the classes in questions of national concern, but, unhappily, in India such a distinction is maintained and frequently emphasised upon by interested or unknowing persons. Whereas, here as elsewhere, the educated and the urban classes regard the masses—the “ large volume of our villagers ”—as their kith and kin and the suburban population regards the urban and the educated countrymen of theirs as their own, the interested parties always try to separate the one from the other. Assuming, without admitting, that they are two separate things, an endeavour will be made in this chapter to describe the attitude towards the British Government in India and the magnificent services rendered by the masses in bringing the war to its successful termination.

Of the loyalty of the masses who include the traders, merchants and peasants and the rest, there has never been the slightest doubt. They generally stand aloof from political agitations except when they realise in a measure of the Government or an omission of an act of justice on its part, on which occasions they do join their leaders. They are loyal because they are wedded to the peace and tranquility which

has always remained abundantly associated with the British Government in India. They form the bulk of the population. They gave their unflinching support to the cause of the Empire by undergoing sacrifices which have been simply immeasurable.

Who supplied the 1½ million of combatants and non-combatants for the fields? Surely the villagers. How many rural families are there in India to-day who are not mourning the loss of their one or more dear and near relatives? and how many of them have not been deprived of their only bread winners? Considering the social institutions of India the losses sustained are tremendous. In England or other Western countries the lot of widows and orphans is not one-thousandth part so bad as in India. There, a widow can remarry if she prefers that course, she can earn her own livelihood; but the case is different in India. Not only a widow has to depend on others for her food and raiment but she loses her entity as a family woman. The magnitude of the sacrifice cannot possibly be realised by persons living under different social conditions and customs. But the war was their king's war, it was their country's war and the Indian masses willingly bore their share of the sacrifice. Complaints have often been made of the apathy of the people in the towns in joining the army but the rural population more than made up the deficiency, if any, in this respect.

As for money assistance. Here, it is feared, the same story cannot be repeated. It is a notorious fact that the Indian villager is the poorest human being on the face of the civilised earth, who does not know for 365 days in the year what a full meal is. This being the case the hard fact must be admitted that in the shape of direct financial assistance the record of the services of the rural population was not quite commensurate with their numbers, although it cannot, in any sense, be called dishonourable or negligible. The villagers did not subscribe to the war loans in thousands of rupees for the simple reason that they could not, although he it said to their credit that whatever little they had they willingly placed at the disposal of their Sirkar.

But indirectly their financial sacrifices have been on a much greater scale than even those of millionaires. Whereas the latter parted only with some—not all—of their luxuries the former had literally to go without food and without clothes.

The war affected the prices of almost all the commodities and those of the necessities of life generally arose thrice or even more times higher than the pre-war level. The belligerent nations had to turn their entire attention to the production of ammunition. Agriculture was suspended, the manufacture of cotton and woollen fabrics was reduced to its minimum. Then, there was the difficulty of

tonnage. In regard to food, the problem was aggravated by the fact that in Europe two great grain exporting countries were unable to export food to the United Kingdom. Mr. Prothero, President of the Board of Agriculture in England, speaking at a luncheon given by the British Empire Producers' Organisation, in November, 1917, said :-- "Agriculture was neglected in the past in the United Kingdom with the result that 35,000,000 of our people ate foreign loaf." What was to be the actual situation after the war was thus stated by him "It would be idle to hug ourselves in the delusion that the United States, Canada and Australia, who, like ourselves, had begun to feel the drain of man power, could so increase their output as to supply the deficiency of European nations, who had lost their power of production and if there was a world shortage of exportable food we were bound to suffer in proportion to the extent that we were dependent not merely for luxuries but for the food by which we maintain the life of the country." If this was to be the post-war condition of affairs, that existing during the war can very well be imagined. The United Kingdom and some other belligerent nations had to depend upon Indian supply of wheat and other food grains. This, in itself, was enough to raise the price of food grains but the failure of the crops in 1918, raised the prices still higher. Fancy wheat selling at 5 or 6 seers (10 or 12lbs) for a rupee.

Never before in the history of this country people had to pay so much for their bread. Even when food grains sold at half or one-third of this price people could not make their two ends meet, what to say of these rates. The result was that people not only straved to death but they fell victims to thousands of diseases which poverty breeds.

The moral harm sustained was even greater. People become desperate when they see no hope of relief for them and have recourse to crimes which, in ordinary circumstances, they abhor. Why were grain shops looted so frequently in every part of the country? Because people had nothing to eat and they could not see others to roll in luxuries when they themselves were starving. All said and done, it must be placed to their credit that realising the necessities of the king and country, the masses bore all these miseries with considerable patience and self-sacrifice, such cases of shop looting having been reported only now and then, the general public having abided the time with commendable self-abnegation. Cloth was still more expensive. If food is the first necessity for a human being, cloth is undoubtedly the second. For a time people can starve but they will not go naked, specially the womenfolk. How many ladies in Bengal committed suicide simply because they had no clothing to protect themselves from the severities of weather and from, which is much worse,



the evil gaze of the neighbour. Time was when India manufactured cloth in quantities not only enough to serve her own needs but she exported it to other countries as well. Gradually our cloth industry disappeared due to causes that need not be mentioned at this place and we had to depend upon other countries for the same. When these latter countries became unable to supply the demand for a whole country naturally the prices went up to unprecedented levels. A pair of dhoties which cost Rs. 1-8-0 before the war was sold for 6 or 7 rupees during the war—a price which even the well-to-do could not easily pay. The result was that our villagers had hardly any cloth to protect themselves. When the epidemic of influenza or war fever as it was called, broke out in 1918, it is a bare truth to say that hundreds of thousands of people succumbed to it because they had nothing in the shape of cloth to save themselves from the weather. It can be imagined what any other people would have done under these circumstances; but, no, Indian is loyal to his king by instinct and by tradition and he cannot think, even under the most trying circumstances, of discharging his duties in any way other than loyal and willing.

Even the handsome gifts of the Government and the well-to-do classes were not without their effect on the masses. The heavy gifts of the ruling princes came out of the pockets of their subjects. It was the

tax payer's—the daily wage-earner's and the agriculturist's—money that was paid. These princes will try to collect that money over again by taxing their subjects and thus the poor people will have to pay twice. The landholders will recover the amount of their gifts from their tenants. The Government has been filling and will fill the gap in its purse by resorting to additional taxation which will ultimately fall on the shoulders of the poor. For instance, the enhancement of the cotton duties mostly affect the masses who will have to pay higher prices for the cloth they purchase. Of course, educated India has welcomed this duty as it has welcomed no other step, but it is in the hope that it will give an impetus to the indigenous cotton industry. True, but the industrial system of the twentieth century makes the rich richer and the poor poorer. The jute industrialists or the paper manufacturers have hoarded any amount of war profits but the condition of labourers has not been any whit the better on that account. They even now live on starving wages, paradoxical though it may sound. The labourers in towns are having resort to strikes in order to get increase in their wages but the village population still lives and will go on living for some time in the same miserable condition. It is possible, even certain, that after a time they will be immensely better off due to the expansion of the Indian cotton industry, but that time is still in the womb of futurity. Speaking

of the present sacrifices one cannot but say that they have been immense.

Take any department of life and it will be found that the sacrifices of the masses have been much too greater than those of any other class of people. Railway travelling restrictions affected them considerably. If a well-to-do gentleman could afford to travel second class in ordinary times he could certainly travel first class in emergent times or, at any rate, could easily pay railway fares at enhanced rates. But the case of the poverty stricken masses was different. Many of them could not afford to pay pre-war fares and often preferred to walk rather than to travel by rail. They argued that if they could save the few farthings they would have to pay as railway fare they would utilise the same for their breakfast or the evening meal. The enhancement of fares in case of the lowest classes of railway travelling hit them hard but they never grudged extra payment on the ground that the extra amount was to go towards the winning of the war in which their king and country were involved.

Instances of similar nature can be multiplied *ad infinitum* but the above account will, it is hoped, give a fairly good idea to the reader what a huge sacrifice it was for the Indian masses to have helped the Government in the way they did in the winning of the war.





*It is, in my opinion, imperative that India should give the flower of her manhood without making any condition whatsoever, since Indians were not a nation of shopkeepers and their religion was a religion of self-sacrifice.*

MRS. SAROJINI NAIDU.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### The Services of Indian Womanhood.

*Is there aught you need that my hands withhold,  
Rich gifts of raiment or grain or gold ?*

*Lo ! I have flung to the East and West  
Priceless treasures torn of my breast,  
And yielded the sons of my stricken womb  
To the drum beats of duty, the sabres of doom.*

*Gathered like pearls in their alien graves,  
Silent they sleep by the Persian waves,  
Scattered like shells on Egyptian sands  
They lie with pale brows and brave, broken hands.  
They are strewn like blossoms mown down by  
chance*

*On the blood-brown meadows of Flanders and  
France.*

*Can ye measure the grief of the tears I weep  
Or compass the woe of the watch I keep ?  
Or the pride that thrills thro ' my heart's despair  
And the hope that comforts the anguish of prayer,  
And the far and glorious vision I see  
Of the torn red banners of victory ?  
When the terror and tumult of hate shall cease  
And life be refashioned on anvils of peace,*

*And your love shall offer memorial thanks  
To the comrades who fought in your dauntless  
ranks,  
And you honour the deeds of your deathless ones,  
Remember the blood of martyred sons.*

MRS. SAROJINI NAIDU.

The expression 'Woman and War' sounds as a contradiction in terms ; the one is the picture of love, devotion, purity and grace while the other has been truly described " as the combination of all the horrors, atrocities, crimes and sufferings of which human nature is capable." And women have, in the past, as the pages of the history of the world bear testimony to, shone as brilliantly in times of war as in times of peace. They have fought on the battlefields to save the honour of their husbands, sons and brothers and, what is more, of their country. In the history of Europe the story of Helen of Troy, the cause of the Trojan War, is well known. The Romans found an antagonist worthy of them in the Egyptian queen, Cleopatra. The British nation is legitimately proud of her Queen Boadicia of martial fame. Even during the late war the women of the West have put in most conspicuous services. A Russian damsel shouldered a rifle and fought in the trenches. A young Servian, Miss Sophia Yovanovitch, had the credit of sending several Turks to their rest. The Grand-Duchess of Luxemburg opposed the on-coming of the German troops by

placing a motor-car in their path till the German soldiers pointed their revolvers at her and told her to get out of the way quickly. These are deeds which will ever stand as the brightest deeds of feminine valour and courage in the history of the world. But though these stray cases are deserving of the greatest praise, the services rendered by the women of the West in the day to day progress of the war cannot be overstated. It can be said that but for these services the Allies could hardly have won the war. If women had not given up their domestic duties, if women had not left their peaceful avocations for munition shops and factories, if women had not gone to the battlefields as nurses and comfort carriers, it is difficult to imagine how the belligerent nations could have put such large numbers of men in the field.

What of Indian Women ? It is widely believed that they are kept confined within the four walls of their zenanas, that they are treated more as cattle or property than as the mothers of warriors and soldiers. A more preposterous idea cannot be imagined. Those who are acquainted with the deeds of the ancient womanhood of India can alone realise the services of Indian ladies in this war. Just as in the case of men the blood of Sivaji, Rana Sanga or Jaswant Singh begins to boil in their veins when they are face to face with an enemy, the spirit of Devaldevi and Ahliyabai asserts



itself in our women when they are told of a war in which their husbands or sons are to take part. Who can forget the words of Devaldevi, wife of Thakur Jasraj Singh of Udaipur, addressed to her sons, Ala and Udal when they, owing to their personal grievance against their lord, the ruler of Chittor, refused to help him in defending his town against the depredation of the enemy. Said she : —

“Would that the Gods had made me barren, that I had never borne sons who thus abandon the paths of the Rajput and refuse to succour their prince in danger.” Her heart bursting with grief and her eyes raised to heaven, she continued : — “Was it for this, O Universal Lord, thou madest me feel a mother’s pangs for these destroyers of Binafur’s fame ? Unworthy offspring ! the heart of a true Rajput dances with joy at the mere name of strife ; but ye degenerate, cannot be the sons of Jasraj, some carl must have stolen to my embrace and from such ye must be sprung.” These words proved irresistible and the two sons, thus inspired by their heroic mother, did their duty and made their parent’s milk resplendent by their deeds. That the daughters of such ancient mothers could remain unmoved in this war was simply unimaginable.

Of course, Indian women could not go to fight on the actual fields of action, that was

inconceivable, although there must be many who were desirous of taking such a step. The following words spoken by Her Highness Princess Taradevi in her speech at Calcutta on 25th December, 1914 were not empty ones. Said she:—

“Gentlemen, though I am a lady of such an advanced age yet I am Kshatriya and when my Kshatriya blood rises up in my veins and when I think I am the widow to the eldest son of one who was a most tried friend of the British Government I jump on my feet at the aspiration of going to the field of war to fight the Britain's battle. It is not I alone, I should say, but there are thousands and thousands of Indian ladies who are more anxious than myself, but there is no such emergency, neither will there ever be one for the ladies to go to the front when there are the brave men who would suffice for fighting the enemies, however powerful they may be. Some might think that if really I am anxious to go to the front then why should I not try for it. Gentlemen, I did. I sent my prayer for sending me to the front.....to my much respected and esteemed friend, Sir James DuBoulay K. C. S. I., Private Secretary to H. E. the Viceroy and Governor General of India.....”

If Indian women could not go to the battle-field to measure swords with the enemies of their king, they knew they could be useful to the Empire in a

thousand and one other ways. They regarded the inevitable sufferings and inconveniences of their sons, husbands and brothers as their own and did their utmost to alleviate these sufferings. They could knit, they could sew and they were not slow to engage themselves in such pursuits and, in time, were able to send parcels of clothes socks, banians, shirts, caps, wastecoats and similar articles of clothing at regular intervals for the use of these saviours of the Empire. They could give money and they did not hesitate in opening the strings of their purses. Cases are not wanting in which ladies parted with their jewellery in order that the sale proceeds of the same might be utilised for the comforts of soldiers. Western people cannot realise fully the magnitude of the sacrifice which is involved in the parting away with her jewellery for an Indian lady. Her jewellery is the only wealth which an Indian woman can call her own; that is her, so to say, savings bank.

The Indian womanhood gave freely of her wealth to the various funds started during the war. Take up the list of any fund and ladies' names will be found neither few nor far between. The Imperial Indian Relief Fund, the Prince of Wales Fund, the Silver Wedding Fund all bear testimony to this fact. Even in the War Loans women's names were not absent. The 'Our Day' Fund was successful mostly for the enthusiasm of ladies.

The work of the provision of comforts for the troops on active service was entirely in the hands of ladies. Her Excellency Lady Chelmsford in a letter to the *London Times* in vindication of the ladies' war relief work wrote:—

“ I feel that it is my duty to attempt to remove the entirely erroneous and ungenerous belief that the women of India have failed to take their share in the work of caring for the troops serving overseas. In the few months that I have spent in India, I have seen enough to satisfy me that, so far from this being the case, the industry and devotion in connection with voluntary work displayed by the women in India will bear comparison with that displayed in England; and the many grateful letters received from the troops in Mesopotamia show that they fully appreciate what India has done for them and would emphatically repudiate the suggestion that they have been neglected and uncared for.”

But this is not all; the greatest sacrifice on the part of our women has yet to be mentioned. As described by a statesman, “ some of them have given something more dear than life itself, they have given the lives of those that are dear to them.” The fighters fight and are killed in action and get to heaven according to the belief of the Hindus. But what about their mothers, wives and children ? It is here that the magnitude of the loss of Indian women is apparent. The soldier who

was killed was the only bread winner of the family which has been deprived of the source of its maintenance. The soldier is fighting in the field for his Emperor, his old mother, his wife and his children are waiting for the worst tidings from the seat of war.

The following appeal made by Mrs. Sarojini Naidu, the pride of Indian womanhood, at the Madras Provincial Conference in 1918, fully bears out the fact that Indian women have not yet lost their ancient Spartan spirit. Said she:—

“ It is, in my opinion, imperative that India should give the flower of her manhood without making any condition whatsoever, since Indians were not a nation of shopkeepers and their religion was a religion of self-sacrifice. But educated Indians stood in the position of ambassadors. On educated Indians devolved the duty of explaining India's needs and England's demands. Thus it was not any conditions that educated Indians try to make. It is necessary for them to convince the people, to inspire the people with the thoughts that the present war was a just war. And how can educated Indians do this unless they are in a position to tell the people that by fighting they are not only achieving other people's freedom but also achieving their own? At the same time I will say this to the youngmen of India. Let young Indians who are ready to die for India and to wipe from her brow the brand of slavery rush to join the standing army or

to be more correct, India's citizen army composed of cultured young men, of young men of traditions and ideals, men who burnt with the shame of slavery in their hearts, will prove a true redeemer of Indian people."

Maharani Nandkumbarba of Bhavanagar established a precedent among Indian Princesses by editing a weekly paper in Gujarati for the express purpose of counteracting German falsehoods and spreading correct news of war among the people of India.

The services of Indian women in various spheres of activity in connection with the war have been acknowledged by competent persons any number of times. Sir James Meston, after recounting the services of a few gentlemen in 1917 paid the following tribute to the services of a lady in Oudh.

"After these gentlemen I should like to mention the name of a lady, Rani Surat Kumar of Kha'rigarh who has done more than most men. With high courage she has interested her tenants and her neighbours in every war activity and she has supplied a number of recruits and displayed very special loyalty."

Mrs. Palmer, the wife of the Bishop of Bombay, sent to the *Daily Telegraph* a most interesting account of the work which was done in connection with the war by the women of India. The description deserves to be quoted here.

"During the course a 'few months' holiday in

England I have found that, while people at home recognise and appreciate the part that has been played by the Indian troops, they are unaware how largely the women of India have helped to supply comforts and necessities for them and for the Imperial soldiers by whose side they are fighting. May I, therefore, give a short account of what was done by the women of the Bombay Presidency, organized by Lady Willington, wife of the Governor of Bombay ?

‘Indian women of all classes have shared in this work and shown great capacity. Large numbers of Hindu and Mahomedan ladies—many strictly purdah women—not only gave generously of their money, but also themselves learnt to knit and to work sewing-machines, and made hundreds of shirts and pyjamas as good as any English shop could produce. In Bombay we have four principal racial divisions, English Hindu, Mahomedan and Parsi, and each community chose its own lady secretary, who organized the work among the women of her own race. •

‘The first necessity was to provide the transports carrying troops from India to Europe with the comforts and clothes which the military authorities were unable to supply in large quantities at short notice.’ In the first few weeks thousands of shirts, socks, pyjamas, and other warm articles of underclothing were placed on board the troopships, together with tobacco, sweets, books, games and other things to relieve the tedium

of the voyage. Then came the sending home of the women and children belonging to the English regiment which had already sailed from India for the front. Hundreds of women and children returning to England in the middle of the winter after perhaps several years spent in India required large quantities of warm clothing of all kinds. These were provided. Plum-puddings for Christmas were also sent to every British soldier serving in the Persian Gulf Expedition and in German East Africa, and hundreds of postcards have shown how much they were appreciated,

'Next came three important undertakings for the wounded.' A 300-bed hospital for Indian soldiers in Bombay was entirely supplied with clothing and linen, each patient being provided with four changes and bed-linen, bandages, and other hospital requisites on a similar scale. Nearly all the work for this hospital was done by Indian ladies. Three ambulance trains for use between Bombay and up-country hospitals were completely equipped by our women's fund, from vacuum cleaners and fly-papers to bandages and bed-socks. Finally, we were asked to undertake a 500-bed hospital at Alexandria, and in a month's time we had packed and despatched all the linen required for it, on the scale of 3,000 sheets, 3,000 pillow-cases, 2,500 blankets, 1,250 pyjama suits, and other things in proportionate quantity.

This is but a bald statement of what was done



before I left India in April, and my own experience enables me to speak only of the Bombay Presidency. But it will show how valuable an opportunity for co-operation between the various races the war has afforded, and how heartily and efficiently English and Indian women have seized that opportunity, and in it have realized their oneness in the British Empire.'

The most fitting conclusion to this chapter is furnished by the generous appreciation of the attitude and services of Indian women during the war by no less a personage than Her Majesty the Queen Empress herself. The following is quoted from the stirring message sent by Her Majesty to the women of India on January, 1st, 1919:—

" Letters from Indian women to husbands, sons and brothers with the forces abroad exhorted them to be brave in battle, stout-hearted in adversity, faithful to their country and Throne to the point of death. The history of India is full of the heroism and courage of her women in the past. The war has shown that the spirit is unabated. The women of India are equally noted for their charity and compassion. I know how deeply they have been moved by the desolation which the war has brought into many households and how ready they have been to provide relief for the sick and wounded and to lighten the privations of their poorer neighbours."

## CHAPTER XV

---

### Indian Students and the War.

When the war broke out, the Indian student community both in England and in India was most enthusiastic. Being youths quite fit for the army and full of youthful virility, naturally their desire to enlist was keen. In England facilities were provided and it was reported in the beginning of 1915 that 180 Indian students from all parts of England enlisted as members of the Volunteer Ambulance Corps and were doing useful service in the Indian Hospitals or on Hospitalships as doctors, dressers, interpreters, etc. Those who had qualified for Doctors were given temporary commissions in the Indian Medical Service and were sent to France. Three Indian students were also sent to France to serve as interpreters on the hospital trains for wounded Indian soldiers. Mr. Poresch Lal Roy, of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, the eldest son of Mr. and Mrs. P. L. Roy, joined the Hon'ble Artillery Company, as a private in December, 1914. He was in action several times. Mr. A. S. Ramalingam, a London B. Sc. in Engineering, enlisted as a private in the Royal Fusiliers and Mr. N. S. Pudumji of St. Catherine's College, Cambridge, served as a private on the 16th (Public Schools) Battalion of the Middlesex Regiment. Other Indian students also

joined the ranks of the Territorials and the new armies.

In April, 1915, Indian students then residing in the United Kingdom and connected with various educational institutions including those who were rendering assistance to the sick and wounded at the different base hospitals and convalescent homes held a meeting at Emerson Club, 19, Buckingham Street, Strand, London and appointed a committee consisting of Dr. Jivraj N. Mehta, Mr. Syed Hossen and Mr. S. Sorabji for the purpose of taking the necessary steps with a view to securing the removal of the disability under which they were labouring by being debarred from joining the Officers' Training Corps. These members waited on Lord Islington to present a memorial to the Secretary of State for India on the question and appealed to him, for reasons stated therein, to make a representation to the Army Council to remove the grievance by securing the admission of Indian members of the Universities and Inns of Court into the respective Officers' Training Corps. In their memorial they remarked that the imposition of a stigma of racial inferiority is peculiarly out of place in educational institutions and in itself calculated to mar the harmony and usefulness of the academic careers of those students effected by it. At a time, however, when thousands of their fellow countrymen were laying down their lives on the battle-fields of Europe, Asia and Africa it could not

be deeply felt and profoundly resented by all Indians. Needless to say that the appeal proved in vain."

In India, the same story repeated itself. At the outbreak of the war, youthful enthusiasm was at its highest and students desired to be enrolled for defending their country against all possible attacks and to fight the battles of the Empire on the various battle-fields. But they could go only as ordinary sepoys without any hopes for their future elevation to commissioned ranks. The enthusiasm was thus cooled down. When the formation of the Indian Defence Force was announced, the students desired to join it in large numbers but the rules and regulations, again, proved the veritable wet blanket. Being sons of gentlemen and noblemen they were desirous to embrace the profession of the sword on the condition that if they were not positively unfit for it, they could reach the topmost step of the ladder in course of time, but here again they could not succeed in their aspirations. But, although, they did not come forward in large numbers, there were many who volunteered themselves and those found fit did join the Defence Force and went to different places for necessary training. The Defence of India Force has been dealt with in a separate chapter.

If Indian students were not allowed by the rules and regulations to put in physical service they helped the Government in various other ways. Our schools

took a creditable share in the supply of money and men. The Universities organised corps of the Indian Defence Force. In the Punjab an attempt was made to raise a company of graduates and under-graduates for active service. 56 fit recruits were forthcoming who were formed into a Brigade Signal Section. As regards Secondary schools in the Punjab that Government's resolution on the Director's report said "their record is one of which they will be proud and proves that the younger generation has inherited to the full the loyal and martial traditions of their forefathers."

Take, then, the Red Cross Fund collection work. This work was actively undertaken by various educational institutions. The Belgian Childrens' day was celebrated in Bombay schools in July, 1916, and produced Rs. 1,30,600. A war loan day was instituted in the same presidency in June, 1917, and large subscriptions were secured.

The Director of Public Instruction in the Central Provinces mentioned the contributions of the Amroati schools to the Overseas Tobacco Fund for the army, the investment of nearly a lakh on the war loan by Berar schools and the keenness displayed at some girls institutions in knitting and sewing. The Punjab report was most noteworthy. The chief educational officer wrote of the splendid response made by the teachers and pupils to the appeal made to them on behalf of the war. To the Imperial Indian

Relief Fund and the Punjab Aeroplane Fund contributions poured in from teachers from schools and even from separate.....classes and though investment in the war loan was obviously impossible for school boys, a suggestion at the Central Model schools that parents might by monthly payment buy postal certificates for their sons resulted in an immediate and unexpected response. The whole of the staff at once announced their intention of co-operating and over 500 students applied for one or more cash certificates. Apart from pecuniary contributions the secondary schools have furnished their quota to the fighting forces of the Crown. „ In the Rawalpindi division alone the number of teachers and pupils of secondary schools who have enlisted is nearly one thousand.”



## CHAPTER XVI.

### The Bengalee Soldiers.

1.

*Who calls me now a coward base,  
And brands my race a coward race ?  
I'll brook no more such scoffing word :  
My King himself has washed the shame  
That fouled so long my stainless name,  
And deem'd me worthy of my sword !*

2.

*Who dare mistrust my loyal faith,  
Or my heroic scorn of death,  
Or my untainted chivalry ?  
These slumbering passions of my breast  
Have wakened at my King's behest,  
To prove what metal is in me.*

3.

*Now who can make a moment's stand  
Before my brave and burnished brind ?  
For with this trusty blade of steel  
I'll smite the foeman hip and thigh,  
And chase him through the earth and sky,  
Until he kiss the ground and kneel !*

4

*Let Turk and Teuton both beware  
And neutral nations too take care :  
Bengal has armed with lance and shield*

*To aid the Empire's righteous cause,  
And hurl her foemen down the jaws  
Of flaming death on battlefield !*

5.

*Come then, my comrades, let us share  
A glory which is new and rare,  
Of bearing Britain's arms, and feel  
That we are Britain's sons as good  
As those that claim a brotherhood  
Of common blood or common meal.*

6.

*Shall I sit still when Duty calls,  
And hide my face within my walls,  
And steep my name in shame indeed ?  
What nobler aim can man attain  
Than serve his King on battle plain,  
And die and earn the Victor's meed ?*

A BENGALÉE.

Long before Macaulay wrote his famous libel on the Bengalee character it was believed and asserted that no native of Bengal would ever make a soldier, that the Bengalees were a race given over to clerking, money and chicane. But the young Bengalee of to-day has fiercely resented this stigma. It is true, however, that until before the breakout of the late European war the Ganges Delta had furnished practically no men to the Indian army. If the educated Bengalee



himself is asked why this was so he will answer that ever since the days of the East India Company the Government, for reasons half concealed and half expressed, refused to recruit them. Men were recruited for the Indian army from almost every other part of the country but Bengal was regarded as unfit for producing a soldier. When the war broke out the young men of that presidency showed the greatest forwardness in offering themselves for military service. An incident may be related here. One Satish Chandra Mukerji of respectable parentage was one of the first batch of Bengalees to join the army. Rejected at first by the military authorities because his chest measurement did not come to the mark he took to swimming and developed his chest and was finally accepted. He was brought up in comfortable circumstances and he went to the front cheerfully not for the sake of pay which was no consideration with him but from motive of patriotism. He died at Baghdad from illness in March, 1918 and was accorded a military funeral.

First in the field was the Bengal Ambulance Corps whose valiant deeds in Mesopotamia can never be forgotten by the Bengalees in particular and the entire country in general.

To show the spirit, devotion of duty, fearlessness and gallantry of the members of the Bengalee Ambulance Corps an incident that occurred on a hospitalship

was narrated by Mr. Saint Nihal Singh in the columns of the *Observer*. A bomb thrown by the Turks landed on the deck with the fuse burning ready to explode at any moment. A Bengalee private on board, without hesitating for an instance, seized the bomb, tore the fuse and threw it into the river. His cool nerve, quick action and complete disregard for personal safety saved the hospitalship and all the wounded soldiers on board from a terrible disaster.

The Bengalees behaved in the same gallant manner while under fire. They reached Mesopotamia in midsummer in 1915 and joined the No. 2 Field Ambulance of the 6th division of the Indian Expeditionary Force a day or two after Kut-el-Emara had been wrested from the Turks. They advanced with General Townshend to Ctesiphon. Heedless of the shot and the shell which the enemy was firing they dragged wounded officers and men from the battlefield during all stages of the battle and carried them to the riverside where they were taken on board the hospitalship. Some of the men belonging to the corps were wounded. In fact the last man to be carried aboard the hospitalship was one of them. After he had been put aboard six bearers went back to the battlefield to carry a wounded soldier to the boat. While they were returning the party was surrounded by Turks and captured. Seventeen others were captured at Kut at the time General Townshend surrendered. One of

the prisoners was a newspaper man belonging to the staff of the *Bengalee*, Mr. Surendra Nath Banerji's paper.

Forty-four of the original 98 volunteers returned to Calcutta and were welcomed by their countrymen enthusiastically. The whole Bengalee race feels proud of them and their comrades who became prisoners ; for they showed to the world at large that notwithstanding the gibes flung at the Bengalee by Macaulay and others he proved himself as valiant as a man of any other race. If official testimony of the valiant deeds of these heroes were needed here is one from an official despatch :—

“ At the end of October the request of the men of the Ambulance Corps to take a part in the anticipated forward movements was acceded to by the military authorities and it was found practicable to form a detachment and to satisfactorily carry on the hospital work with the purely medical and surgical staff ; the detachment proceeded to the front under the charge of Havildar A. C. Champati and was attached to No. 2 Field Ambulance, 6th division. It joined the advanced forces a day or two after the battle of Kut-el-Emara and afterwards remained with the 6th division throughout its advance and was present at the battle of Ctesiphon where the men came under severe fire and from all accounts did valuable work in succouring the wounded. The men worked with the greatest

of gallantry under heavy shell fire and afterwards rendered valuable assistance in removing the wounded to the riverbank. They took their full share of the hardships of the actions at the end of November and in reduced numbers owing to sickness due to exposure have been at the front uptill now."

But this was not all. Many Bengalees previous to the formation of the Ambulance Corps had enlisted in the French army and were conveyed to France to fight for the Republic. They went from Chandernagore, a French possession on the Hoogli near Calcutta. Soon after hostilities commenced the French Governor-General appealed to the Indian citizens to volunteer for active service under the Tricolor on the same terms that were offered to men born on the soil of France. Bengalees owing allegiance to the Republic came forward readily and two contingents were at once despatched to France.

Two or three Bengalees residing in the United Kingdom enlisted in British Regiments shortly after war was declared. One of them was Jogendra Nath Sen who, after taking B. Sc. in Engineering from the Leeds University, was employed as an Assistant Electrical Engineer by the Leeds Corporation. He joined the 15th West Yorkshire as a private and died on May 23rd while fighting valiantly in France. The officer in charge of his Company wrote of his conduct in glowing terms and his widowed mother

received a message of condolence from Their Majesties.

The members of the Bengal Ambulance Corps and other Bengalees who went to the field not only removed the stigma of cowardice on the character of the entire Bengalee race but cleared the way for future military services by that community. Their deeds inspired in the Bengalee race the hope that the Bengalee can be a good soldier.

A deputation was got up to wait upon Lord Chelmsford after his assumption of the viceroyalty, praying for the formation of a Bengalee Regiment and the whole province was enthusiastic with joy when the formation of the Regiment was sanctioned. Needless to say that the enthusiasm of the earlier years was not allowed to die and as time passed on the Bengalees displayed more and more zeal in military affairs and wherever they fought they proved that their race could compete with any other nationality in valour, courage and devotion to duty in the battle-field just as it can be beaten by none in intellectual pursuits.

That the Bengalees have been accorded a separate, though brief, chapter in this book is due to two outstanding facts. First, the wrong impression of the world is to be corrected. Macaulay dubbed the Bengalees as a race of cowards and that was the impression generally prevailing in the world. How incorrect that view was has been fully proved by

the spirit and deeds of valour of the Bengalee race in this war. Secondly, and which is no less important, doubts were expressed in some quarters as to the advisability of arming Bengalee youths when, unfortunately, some among them had been led astray by totally misguided ideas of patriotism to commit cold-blooded murders and crimes and had thereby brought a stigma and humiliation on their countrymen. But the whole race was not to be misjudged by the misdeeds of a few. The Bengalee community, as a whole, was as loyal as any other community in India or elsewhere and their services in the war can stand comparison with those of any other community taking all the circumstances in view. Of course, there can be no comparison between Bengal and the Punjab in numbers but it must not be forgotten that the Punjab was occupied by the British at a much later period than Bengal and that the operation of the Arms Act and the closure of the military profession to the Bengalees have been operating in Bengal since a much longer time than in the Punjab.



## CHAPTER XVI.

### The Indian Native States and the War.

*The safety of our rule is increased, not decreased by the maintenance of Native chiefs well affected to us.....In the Mutiny these patches of native Government served as break-waters to the storm which would have otherwise swept over us in one great wave and in quiet times they have their uses... ..And should the day come when India shall be threatened by an external enemy or when the interests of England elsewhere may require that her Eastern Empire shall incur more than ordinary risk one of our best mainstays will be found in these native states. It was long ago said by Sir John Malcolm that if we could keep up a number of native states as Royal instruments we should exist in India as long as our naval superiority in Europe was maintained.*

LORD CANNING IN 1860.

*Again I prefer not to deal with such service as we (rulers of native states) may have been able to render during the present crisis. But as regards our past services it must be known to you that in the Mutiny the states all fought on the side of and stood steadily for the British Government just as a matter*

*of fact did a greater number of the people of British India and some regiments of Indian army even though it was called the Indian Mutiny of the Indian army.*

#### H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF BIKANER.

The Indian Native States form an integral portion of the British Empire. They comprise, out of 1,766,642 square miles of India, 690,000 square miles of area and contain 66,000,000 out of 315,000,000 people of the Indian Empire. But their influence is much more widespread than on this area and population. The Maharana of Udaipur, for instance, is universally respected throughout Hindu India which would, at any time be glad to follow his lead where prestige and religion of the Hindus were in question. Similarly H. E. H the Nizam of Hyderabad commands the moral allegiance not only of his own subjects but of the entire Musalman population of India.

The rulers of native states have always been loyal to the British connection of India. How they effectively stemmed the tide of disaffection and sedition in the days of the Mutiny by their unflinching devotion to the British has been acknowledged by one and sundry. Turn to the pages of the official gazetteer of any native state and it will be found that the ruler has to his credit or to the credit of his father or some remoter ancestor some signal service rendered to the British in that time of danger.



It will be no exaggeration to say, in fact, that the Ruling Princes of India have substantially helped the foundation, the formation and the maintenance of the British Indian Empire. Mr. John Dickenson has written in his book "*Dhar Not Restored*."

"In fact, not only were Madras and Bombay unsafe but only one thing was wanting to set all India in a blaze and that seemed imminent, the defection of the native princes. Their armies, their people, even ladies of their zenana and members of their families urged them by every motive they could appeal to, to attack the hated foreigners at the head of their countrymen. It was felt that their opposition to the national movement deprived it of all moral sanction and neutralised its temporary advantage of physical force. The body wanted a head to command it and the most passionate efforts were made to gain over such princes as Scindhia, Holkar, the Nizam, the Banka Bai and others. They were promised empire, they were menaced with the extremities of popular fury; they were bitterly reproached with cowardly betrayal of their ancestral fame and their own and their peoples' interests; they were reminded how immensely we were out-numbered, how nearly we were exhausted; the mass of vulgar minds (English as well as native) could not understand why Indian Princes, why all the most enlightened of the Indian race should support the foreigners in such a crisis."

That was, however in remote times. Coming nearer we find that H. H. Maharaja Sir Ganga Singh Bahadur of Bikaner actually fought in China at the head of his Camel Corps. In the Boer War and in the Tirah and Mohmund Campaigns the services of the Indian princes have been, equally valuable.

During the present war the services of these states have been such as to entirely eclipse their previous records. No sooner the news of the declaration of war by England against Germany flashed across the wires to this country than the rulers of these states offered, with one voice, their personal services, the services of their armies and the entire resources of their states to His Majesty's government.

From among many princes and nobles who volunteered for active service the Chiefs of Jodhpur, Bikaner, Kishangarh, Ratlam, Sachin and Patiala, Sir Pratap Singh, Regent of Jodhpur, the Heir-apparent of Bhopal and a brother of the Maharaja of Cooch Behar together with other cadets of noble families were selected by the Viceroy. How the ruling princes came forward to help the Empire was described by Mr. Charles Roberts in the statement read by him in the House of Commons on 19th September, 1914, a statement which has since become historic.

A story of a youthful prince's loyalty to the British Throne was told by Mr. G. W. E. Russel in a meeting in England.

The prince is said to have gone to the British Resident and asked—

“Can you allow me to go and fight in Europe.”  
 “No,” said the Resident. “I am put here to safeguard the interests of your dynasty and I must not sanction any plan to jeopardise your life.”

He consented, however, to forward a letter to the Viceroy and the youth with the aid of a spelling book concocted an elaborate epistle the effect of which was as follows:—

“Will Your Excellency allow me to go and do my duty by the King-Emperor? All my people are going and what sort of figure should I cut when I come to reign over them hereafter if they are able to say, ‘what were you doing when we went and fought for the King-Emperor?’ It is true I am only sixteen but an Indian of sixteen is a man,”

“That appeal carried the day” said Mr. Russel, “and the prince was allowed to go. He took his part as an Indian gentleman should, under the English banner in France and in Flanders.

The above story may be a statement of facts or only the production of the fertile brain of the relater; but it cannot be denied that the spirit shown in the story was there in every ruling chief and those who were able to go to the front did go and fight the King’s battles.

In a proper consideration of the services of

Indian Native States in the late war, the fact cannot be overlooked that, just as British India had been maintaining an army much too larger than her own needs required for, a considerably long time, most of the Native States had been keeping Imperial Service Troops for the service of the Empire. These troops were established in 1889 and the total strength of them on 1st April, 1912, was 22,271 towards which as many as 29 states contributed. They included some 10,000 infantry, 7,500 cavalry while transport and camel corps contributed 2,700 and 700 men respectively. Sappers also numbered about 700. These troops are under regular inspection of British officers, they belong to the States and are recruited from their subjects. Their armament is the same as that of the Indian army and in training, discipline and efficiency they are as good as the Indian army. They had already done good service on the North-West Frontier as also in China and Somaliland. On the outbreak of the war practically the whole body of Imperial Service troops was immediately placed at the service of the King-Emperor and large bodies of them proceeded to the various theatres of war. Many of the Ruling Chiefs added considerably to the number of their Troops in the course of the war.

In the second part of the book the activities and

services of several ruling chiefs have been mentioned at some length. Those of some others, big and small, may briefly be touched upon here. Of course, at the time of the publication of this book the collective figures of men and money furnished by the Native States are not available.

The total contributions made in connection with the war by the Jaipur State in Rajputana (annual revenue, 65 lakhs) amount to a trifle less than 57 lakhs of rupees. Of this sum 41 lakhs represent money invested in the two Indian War Loans. His Highness's personal contribution to the latter being 10 lakhs. His Highness' gifts to various war funds and charities include the following:—Imperial Indian War Relief Fund, 1½ lakh. The Prince of Wales War Relief Fund, 1 lakh. Contribution towards expenses of the War, 1915, 5 lakhs and 1918, 5 lakhs. Hospitalship 'Loyalty,' 1 lakh. Silver Wedding Fund, 90,000, gift to H. M. the King as thanks-offering on His Majesty's recovery from his accident towards the purchase of a Battery of machine guns for the Indian Army, Rs. 30,000; New Year's Gift to Her Majesty, 1915, for the benefit of soldiers and sailors, Rs. 15,000; Our Day General Fund, Rs. 25,000; Jaipur Our Day Fund, Rs. 5,000; Red Cross Fund and St. John Ambulance Association, Rs. 9,544; Union Jack Club, Rs. 1,000; French Red Cross Fund, Rs. 1,500; Recreation Huts for Mesopotamia, Rs. 5,000 and many

smaller sums making a total of over 15½ lakhs of rupees in war gifts alone.

The State furnished no less than 12,351 recruits to the Indian Army of which 11,169 were combatants. The latter were mainly recruited from the sturdy and martial races of Sheikhawati and have proved themselves to be some of the best soldiers in the world whose deeds in this war have already earned undying fame. In addition, the Jaipur Transport Corps consisting of 1,200 ponies, 560 carts and 792 men was one of the first to go to the Front at the beginning of the war.

The state of Sitamau is a small state in Central India with an area of 350 square miles, population 24,000 and annual revenue over a lakh of rupees and yet H. H. Raja Ram Singh Bahadur made the following contributions:—

Imperial Indian Relief Fund, Rs. 3,000; towards the general expenses of the war, Rs. 10,000; towards the purchase of motor-cars or char-a-banes to be used for the purpose of giving drives to convalescent patients at war hospitals, Rs. 10,000; towards the Prince of Wales Fund, Rs. 1,000.; Our Day, Rs. 750 besides many other smaller gifts. He invested Rs. 1,47,534 in the various war loans and furnished 144 recruits. He is also a contributor to the Hospitalship 'Loyalty'; other contributions from the State were Her Highness Rani Sahiba Bhatianji;

Rs. 1,000 towards the Silver Wedding Fund.

Pandit Jashwant Rao Amrita Rao Thombare, B. A.,  
Diwan, Rs. 100.

Her late Highness Rani Sahiba Rajawatji, Rs. 100  
towards the Imperial Indian Relief Fund.

And about Rs. 1,200 from the subjects of the State.

H. H. The Raja of Mandi (a small state in the  
Punjab, area 1,200 square miles, population 174,045  
and revenue Rs. 4,30,000) made the following  
contributions :—

The Punjab Indian Imperial Relief Fund,  
Rs. 3,338; The Punjab Aeroplane Fund, Rs. 3,895;  
Y. M. C. A. Fund, Rs. 575; Lady O'Dwyer's Fund for  
comforts of Troops, Rs. 647; Our Day Fund, Rs.  
6,786; present to Imperial Government, Rs. 20,000  
or a total of Rs. 35,241. The State supplied also 86  
blankets, 92 pairs of rope sole shoes, 153 shirts and  
many other articles.

The record of recruitment of the state was 1,040 men  
for the Indian Army. Every recruit enlisted after April  
1st, 1916 was allotted a grant of land up to 20 bighas  
by the Darbar. As for War Loans the State invested  
in them as follows :— British Exchequer Bonds,  
Rs. 90,000; the First Indian War Loan, Rs. 1,73,000;  
Conversion Loan, Rs. 1,66,000 and the second Indian  
War Loan, Rs. 78,850.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### The Landholders and the War.

*With us Loyalty is a fundamental creed, the alpha and omega of our principles, and indeed it cannot but be so. We, as a class, have the largest stake in the land and our interests are bound down within the borders of this country. Our hopes and aspirations centre round it and it is but natural and spontaneous that we have the most fervent loyalty for the Government which guarantees security to the lives and properties of landlords and tenants alike. The relation of the zamindars and the Government is one of mutual duties, the Government have taken us under their protective wing of peace and shelter and, in return, we pay the revenue and owe a deep allegiance of loyalty. It is accordingly with feelings of pride and joy that I am able to say that the noblemen of India have come forward in this supreme crisis of the Empire and risen to the occasion by proffering their best to the service of the Crown.*

MAHARAJA OF DARBHANGA.

*There is one very important section of the Indian population whose services and sacrifices, in the cause of the Empire during the war, have been second to none other's and which, on that account, as well as on*



the score of its social importance deserves a prominent mention. It is the class of landowners which consists of large numbers in all parts of the country, in towns as well as in villages. They are generally wealthy although there are many who possess only small patches of land and live from hand to mouth. They wield untold influence on village people specially the tillers of soil who are their own tenants. Although there are politicians who are landholders just as there are landholders who take active part in Indian politics yet, as a rule, landholders generally keep themselves aloof from active politics specially when it is adverse criticism of the measures of the Government. Ask a Government official and he will, without the least hesitation, answer that that of the landowners is the most loyal community in India. Naturally, therefore, during the war the district officer always tapped the resources of this class before he appealed to other sections of the Indian population, whether the need was for recruits, for funds, for comforts or for personal services and no landholder ever refused to comply with such demands. He sincerely believes that he owes his position largely to the good will of the Government.

It is a pity that there is no organised means whereby the financial and other services and sacrifices rendered and borne by this community as a whole could be ascertained, although everybody knows full well that these services and sacrifices fall short of those of no

other class, even of the ruling chiefs. The bulk of the recruits, combatants for the army and non-combatants for labour forces were provided chiefly through the offices and influences of this community. Landholders had not only to give concessions and grant reductions in revenue and even muafis to their tenants in order to induce them to go to the field but had to spend large sums otherwise for getting supplies of such men. The Government asked each landholder to supply a certain number of combatants and non-combatants from his estates and he had to comply with the demand whatever the expenses and the exertions. The donations made to war funds by the members of this class were always very munificent and ungrudging. They invested untold money in War Loans. In supplying comforts for troops they were the most forward. For wounded soldiers lying in hospitals this class provided the largest comforts. The Maharaja Bahadur of Balrampur parted with jewelley from his Toshakhana to a valuable extent. The ladies of this class were also most generous in their contributions to the various causes. The parcels of comforts sent from every district week after week in the names of the wives of the district officers were mostly the gifts of this class of people. In short, there was no sphere of activity relating to war in which this community did not take the most active and generous part, except perhaps, the political.

To illustrate the nature and the extent of the assistance given by the zamindars the contributions in men, money and materials and other activities of some representative gentlemen of the community have been detailed in Part II of this book. These contributions are typical of those of the rest of the class, the difference being only in quantity, not in quality.





---

# **India's Services in the War.**

## **PART II.**

### **Some Individuals' Services.**



---







*India has fulfilled my faith in her single-minded devotion to my person and Empire and she has vindicated my confidence in her loyalty.*

H. M. THE KING.

## CHAPTER I.

---

### H. M. King George V.

If there is any one person in the vast British Empire who has contributed the greatest to the success of the Allies in the European war, it is, undoubtedly, our beloved King-Emperor George V. He is the pivot on which the British Empire hangs, he is the golden string which binds the various parts of the Empire into one homogenous whole. Every soldier, English, Scotch, Welsh, Irish. Australian, Canadian, New Zealander, South African and Indian fought for him. In India specially the King is the person that really counts.

H. H. The Maharaja of Gwalior truly said, at Delhi, the other day. "It was the personality of His Gracious Majesty the King-Emperor which has won him an ample and firm place in the affections of his people. It is not the sentiment which only tradition breeds that I express but a deduction from the world's history when I say that a hereditary throne is the greatest binding and welding force in the life of nations and communities. We, the princes of India, rejoice to find on all sides undeniable signs of attachment to the British Throne and it inspires us with the brightest hopes for the



good of humanity and the peace of the world to find the British Throne to which we are bound by very close ties more secure than ever before in consequence of the great struggle which has thrown many a crown into the melting pot."

The following tribute was paid to the King by Mr. Lloyd George on the occasion of the silver wedding, so far as it related to war.

"No King was ever called upon to face graver issues or more shattering events. For generations the Empire had enjoyed a peace and a tranquility unbroken except by incidents which barely disturbed the surface of the national current. Soon after the King ascended the throne there were signs of a coming storm. The Agadir episode was the first cloud that heralded the approaching break in the weather. At last the tempest burst in all its fury and for four years the world has been devastated by the greatest hurricane that ever swept over the surface of the globe. .... The King has faced it all with the calmness of one trained in youth to encounter stormy seas. Those who had the privilege to serve as his ministers, during these 4 years, of all parties, can best testify to his undaunted courage under the most dismaying conditions, how in hours of anxiety he had all watched the vicissitudes of this terrible conflict and fulfilled in every sphere of counsel and action all the functions of a constitutional monarch in the hour of his country's peril. His constant thoughts

for those who on land and seas are undergoing endless dangers for their country, his solicitude and that of the Queen for those who are suffering pain for their native land, their tenderness for those who are bearing the more poignant and enduring pangs of grief, all these have sunk deep into the hearts of the people. Mr. Asquith on the same occasion said :—

Their Majesties' married life was just entering, I think, upon its 17th year when by the lamented death of King Edward VII, they were suddenly called to the highest place in the Empire. That was a long apprenticeship, but its years had not been wasted in frivolity or idleness. It happened when King George succeeded to the Throne—that I was at the head of the Government, and I continued to hold that position for nearly the whole of the first seven years of his eventful reign. No one, therefore, has had better opportunities for sitting at close quarters and knowing at first hand the part which the King and his Consort have played during a series of varied and testing phases of the unfolding of our national history. If there are any people who are disposed to think that apart from social and ceremonial duties the function of a constitutional Sovereign is that of a benevolent cipher or detached looker on. I can assure them they know very little of the truth. (Cheers.) This is not an occasion on which it would be appropriate to define or defend the office of the monarchy in a democratic age and country. But what concerns us to-day is not the abstract merits or practical utility of the institution, but the manner in which it has been worked in times of almost unexampled difficulty by our present King and Queen. The earlier years of their reign, I am speaking now of the times before the war, had more than their share of troubled and anxious times. But through them all, as I can testify, the King with the ever ready sympathy and co-operation of Her Majesty, never lost head, or heart, or nerve, always leant towards policies of reconciliation and appeasement, diligently thought out day by day the problems whether of his own

duty or of the nation's need, showed unfailing consideration for those who had the privilege to serve him and when he had accepted the final counsels of his constitutional advisers adopted and acted on them with whole-hearted sympathy. (Cheers.)

#### EFFORTS TO PRESERVE PEACE.

It is four years ago this month since the King with the object, if possible, of surmounting the most formidable of all our domestic difficulties, brought together, unhappily without result, the Buckingham Palace Conference. The clouds to which my right hon. friend referred were already gathering on the international horizon. The first preoccupation of the King, as of his Ministers, was if, and so long as, it could be done without breach of our national honour to avert the unimaginable calamities of European war. When the full history of the closing days of July, 1914, is unveiled it will be known—till then it cannot be known—with what unwearied tact and assiduity His Majesty strove for peace. (Cheers.) But it was not to be and even with the incomplete evidence that has yet been given to the world there is no longer any question at whose door lie the guilt and responsibility for this war. (Cheers.) There was a saying in the ancient world that it is rule which tests the real quality of a man. Let me add to that, it is the experience of war, and of such a war as this, that tests the real quality of a democratic King. Few who have not seen him at first hand can realise the gravity of the burden which from the first day of the war has lain on the shoulders of the King and Queen, or the extent to which they have voluntarily added to its weight by countless self-imposed tasks and duties. (Cheers.) They have won for themselves by the worthiest of all titles a title which no pedigree can confer by their daily share in the efforts, the sufferings, the sacrifices of their subjects, an impregnable place in the hearts of the people and an undying memory in the country's annals. It is fitting that this house should offer, as it is about to do to-day, a tribute of its gratitude and affection to their Majesties and express a heart felt hope that their reign may be prolonged to witness the garnered fruits of an honourable peace.

(Cheers.)

India cannot possibly forget the days when King George and his Royal consort came to India in 1911 to celebrate their Coronation ceremony in a public Darbar at Delhi when the princes and the people were enabled for the first time in the history of British India to see their sovereign amidst themselves. The mutual love and attachment that came into existence during that historic visit has since become imperishable. Indians of all classes and creeds are prepared to suffer to any extent, if it could lead to the strengthening of the tie between their sovereign and themselves. It can be very well understand why the Royal messages during the war created unprecedented enthusiasm in the country. When ministers asked India for help, when the Viceroy appealed for help, India might have made certain conditions but it was the King's commands alone which they thought should be unconditionally and religiously obeyed in toto. Indian traditions make her people adopt that behaviour towards their King, who ever it be, but in the case George V, it was a duty mixed with pleasure to serve him.



## CHAPTER II.

### H. E. H. the Nizam of Hyderabad.

His Exalted Highness the Nizam, or to give him his full name, Asaf Jah, Muzaffar-ul-mumalik, Rustam-i-Dauran, Arstu-i-Zaman, Nizam-ul-mulk, Nizam-ud-daula, Nawab Mir Osman Ali Khan Bahadur, Fateh-jang of Hyderabad traces his descent from the first Khalif Abu Bakar, the successor of the great Prophet. The founder of the Hyderabad ruling family was the son of Ghazi-uddin (a famous general of Aurangzeb) who helped so much in the establishment of the Moghal Power in the Deccan. To go into the ancient history of the state and to dwell on the excellent relations that have ever existed between the Nizams and the British Government is not necessary here—a brief mention of the history of recent times will suffice for the purposes of this volume. In 1853 a treaty was concluded between the Nizam and the British Government whereby the former ceded to the British Government certain territories belonging to him in return of which the British agreed to maintain for the defence of the dominions of the Nizam an auxiliary force of 5000 infantry, 2000 cavalry and four field batteries. When the Mutiny of 1857 broke out, the Nizam of Hyderabad with the advice of his minister, Sir Salar



*Let it be generally known that at this critical juncture it is the bounden duty of the Mahomedans of India to adhere firmly to their old and tried loyalty to the British Government specially when there is no Muslim or non-Muslim power in the world under which they enjoy such personal and religious liberty as they do in India.*

H. E. H. THE NIZAM.



Jung, threw in his lot with the British, heart and soul. Had the Nizam adopted a different attitude at that critical juncture of the British history in India what the result would have been it is not very difficult to imagine. The British appreciated the Nizam's magnificent help at the time and in 1860 the treaty of 1853 was modified with the result that a part of the territory ceded in 1853 to the British was restored to the Nizam. Since then the relations between the two powers have always been extremely friendly. In 1885, the present Nizam's father, H. H. Sir Mahbub Ali Khan Bahadur, offered his troops for the Egyptian Campaign. A similar offer was made by him when an invasion of Afghanistan by Russia was threatened. Two years later, the Nizam gave expression of his loyalty to the British Throne by offering the Viceroy a sum of 60 lakhs of rupees towards the defence of the North-West Frontier against a possible Russian invasion remarking that the time had arrived for showing in some open manner that India was united on the question of Frontier defence. His late Highness supplemented this offer which was in itself very handsome by offering himself to take the field personally, should a war occur. This offer was handsomely acknowledged by Her Most Gracious Majesty the Queen herself.

As, however, there was no actual invasion and the offer of Rs. 60 lakhs made by the Nizam was not



utilised, a contingent of Imperial Service Troops was established in the state in return thereof.

The present Nizam was born in 1886 and installed on the *gaddi* in 1911 by Colonel Pinhey, the Resident. In reply to the Resident's speech on the occasion His Highness gave expression to the following sentiments.

"You, on behalf of H. E. the Viceroy, have generously acknowledged how well my beloved father maintained the traditions of my house as the faithful ally of His Majesty's Government of India and I assure you and, through you, His Excellency that my best endeavours will always be directed towards the strengthening of that tradition which means, in effect, doing good to my people and country on the one hand and promoting, on the other hand, the general welfare of the Indian Empire of which my state is an indispensable part. I feel sure that the Government of India will ever extend to me the same friendly regard and cordial consideration that they entertained towards my father."

And His Highness's attitude towards the Government of India and the British Empire during the late European War bears testimony to the sincerity with which the above ideas were expressed.

When the war broke out in August, 1914, H. H. the Nizam sent the following telegram to H. E. the Viceroy.

"Your Excellency is aware that the whole resources

of my state are at the disposal of the British Government and it is a pride to me that one of my regiments has been accepted and is now under orders for foreign service. But this is not enough. In 1887, my revered father offered to H. I. Majesty Queen Victoria the sum of Rs. 60 lakhs when danger merely threatened the borders of the Indian Empire. I should be untrue alike to the promptings of my own heart and to the traditions of my house if I offered less to His Imperial Majesty King George V in this just and momentous war. As your Excellency is aware, the subject of contribution on this occasion has been under my consideration for some time past and I now desire to suggest for your Excellency's approval that it should take the following shape ; two regiments will be engaged in the war in which I have a special and personal interest, viz., my own First Imperial Service Lancers and the 20th Deccan Horse of which I have the honour to be Colonel. My wish is to be permitted to defray the entire expenses of these two regiments from the date of their departure from Hyderabad to the day of their return to the Cantonment from the campaign. But, in no case, will my war contribution fall short of Rs. 60 lakhs and I desire to place this sum at your Excellency's disposal forthwith. I trust that this proposal will meet with your Excellency's acceptance."

His Excellency the Viceroy sent the following reply to the above telegram :—

" I have to-day received your Highness's telegram and I hasten to express my very warm appreciation of your most generous offer of Rs. 60 lakhs towards the cost of the present war to be devoted, in the first instance, to defraying the entire expenses of the two regiments in which your Highness is interested, viz., your own splendid regiment of First Imperial Service Lancers and the 20th Deccan Horse of which you are the Colonel during the whole of the period that these regiments are on foreign service overseas. The traditional loyalty of your house and all its rulers to the British Government has always been meritorious and has been proved on many an occasion of difficulty and danger and the present demonstration of loyalty to our King-Emperor and of a heartfelt desire to help the Empire is only one more proof, if such were needed, of your Highness's intense patriotism and devotion."

The war with Turkey was announced on November 1st, 1914, and His Highness the Nizam being not only a Musalman himself but a ruler of a considerable population of Muslim India lost no time in issuing a *Farman* to his subjects enjoining upon them not to waver in their loyalty to the British even if Turkey was an ally of the enemies of the King. In this *Farman* His Highness said :

" In view of the present aspect of the war in Europe let it be generally known that at this critical

juncture it is the duty of the Mahomedans of India to adhere firmly to their old and true loyalty to the British Government, specially when there is no Moslim or non-Moslim power in the world under which they enjoy such personal and religious liberty as they do in India and when, moreover, they are assured by the British Government that as it has, in the past, always stood the best friend of Islam so will it continue to be Islam's best friend and will always protect and cherish its Moslem subjects. I repeat and reiterate that in the crisis before us the Mahomedan inhabitants of India, specially the subjects of this state, should, if they care for their own welfare and prosperity, remain firm and whole-hearted in their loyalty and obedience, sever not a hair's breadth from their devotion to the British Government whose cause, I am convinced, is just and right, keep sacred the tie which binds the subject peoples to their rulers and lastly that they should, in no case, allow themselves to be beguiled by the wiles of any one into a course of open or secret sedition against the British Government.

Finally I give expression to the hopes that as I, following the traditions of my ancestors hold myself ever ready to devote my own person and all the resources of my state, and all that I possess to the service of Great Britain, so will all the Mahomedans of India, specially my own beloved subjects, show themselves whole-heartedly ready in the same way."

In January, 1918, in appreciation of the eminent services rendered by His Highness the Nizam, the special style of "His Exalted Highness" was conferred on him and the honourable title of "Faithful Ally of the British Government" was confirmed to him. The following correspondence that took place between His Majesty King-Emperor George V and His Exalted Highness the Nizam on the Subject, is worth reproduction here.

BUCKINGHAM PALACE.

*24th January, 1918.*

YOUR EXALTED HIGHNESS,

"It has given me great satisfaction to show my appreciation for the eminent services which you have rendered to my Empire during the war by conferring on you the special style of "Exalted Highness" and by confirming to you formally the honourable title of "Faithful Ally of the British Government" by which your Exalted Highness and your predecessors have long emphasized your loyalty to my ancestors and myself.

Following the high example of your illustrious predecessors at the time of the signature of the early treaties between the British Government and the Hyderabad State and afterwards in the days of the Indian Mutiny, Your Exalted Highness has again

given in your own person clear proof of your right to bear that historic title. In the prominent position enjoyed by Your Exalted Highness as the leading Mahomedan Prince of India, your loyalty was displayed in the early months of the present war by the issue of a proclamation enjoining on your subjects and impressing on your co-religionists throughout India the duty of firm and steadfast devotion to my Throne and Empire.

The munificent contributions made by Your Exalted Highness from time to time for objects connected with the war have borne striking and public testimony to the strength of the enduring bond which unites the destinies of Great Britain and Hyderabad.

Trusting that Your Exalted Highness may long continue to enjoy health and prosperity, I sign myself

Your sincere friend and Emperor,

(Sd.) GEORGE R. I.

---

KING KOTHI

HYDERABAD,

23rd May, 1918.

YOUR IMPERIAL MAJESTY,

I desire to offer to Your Imperial Majesty my loyal and sincere thanks for the gracious letter dated the

*24th January, 1918, which I have had the honour to receive through His Excellency the Viceroy conferring on me the special style of " Exalted Highness " and confirming formally the honourable and historic title of " Faithful Ally of the British Government ".*

It is a matter of supreme gratification to me that whatever services I, following in the footsteps of my ancestors, have been able to render to Your Imperial Majesty's Crown during the present war should have met with this signal recognition at the hands of the Emperor himself.

There was nothing of which my late lamented father was more proud, than being styled " the Faithful Ally of the British Government ". And the formal confirmation of this title is therefore an honour which I shall always prize very highly. I am led to value this title all the more by the admiration we feel at the glorious part which is being played by the mighty British Empire in the present struggle to preserve the freedom and civilization of the world. The longer the war lasts the closer will be drawn the bonds uniting the Princes of India with your Imperial Majesty's Throne, Person and Government, and with the assurance that my State will always be ready and willing in every way to assist according to its means the Government of Your Imperial Majesty.

I beg to subscribe myself, Your Imperial Majesty's

sincere Friend and the Faithful Ally of the British Government

(Sd.) MIR OSMAN ALI KHAN.

Now coming to the practical assistance rendered by the Nizam towards the prosecution of the war, the same can be divided into 3 descriptions, in men, in money and in materials. The following figures will describe the same:—

MILITARY,

(a) The 1st Hyderabad Imperial Service Cavalry regiment was despatched to Egypt in 1914 and has been serving in Egypt and Palestine ever since. The regiment has been in action on several occasions and has sustained a number of casualties. Special commendation has been accorded to the Regiment and to individual officers for their conduct in action.

(b) One hundred rough-riders and two officers were deputed to Muttra in 1915 to train horses for the cavalry and have been employed on this duty ever since.

(c) In order to encourage recruiting within the Dominions, Assistant District Recruiting Officers have been appointed to work under the orders of the Divisional Recruiting Officer at Secunderabad. Salaries of these officers and their establishments, together with all expenditure in connection with recruiting, is borne by His Exalted Highness' Government. 4955 men were recruited for the Indian Army within the Dominions



up to June, 1918. Since the appointment of the special establishment, the average number of recruits has risen from 217 men per month to 700.

(d) A number of European and Anglo-Indian Officers in Civil employ have been allowed to join the Army. They retain their lien on their appointments, their service in the Army is counted for civil pension, and they receive an allowance not exceeding half their pay in civil employ according to the circumstances of each case.

(e) Special concessions were also given in the matter of leave and pay to Government servants called up for general training in the Indian Defence Force.

(f) The 20th Deccan Horse, of which His Exalted Highness is an Honorary Colonel, were re-armed with new pattern swords at a cost of Rs. 10,000 before proceeding to the war. Chargers were also presented to the Officer Commanding and five other officers of the 20th Deccan Horse.

(g) 167 mules, 150 cavalry horses and 35 artillery horses, belonging to His Exalted Highness' Army were sold to the Government of India to assist the work of mobilization, and the State Army remained temporarily short of strength in consequence.

#### FINANCIAL.

The financial contributions to the prosecution of the war consist partly of subscriptions to the war loans and partly of free gifts.

(a) Subscriptions to the War Loans are as follows:—

	Rs.
4% Loan of 1916-17 ... ..	39,00,000
5% War Loan 1929-1947 ... ..	75,00,000
5½% War Bonds repayable 1921 ..	50,00,000
	<hr/>
	1,64,00,000

(b) The free gifts amount to Rs. 1,93,09,600. The major subscriptions are :—

Towards the payment of the War charges of the 20th Deccan Horse and the 1st Hyderabad Imperial	Rs.
Service Cavalry ... ..	*1,53,00,000.
Prince of Wales Relief Fund ... ..	1,00,000
Imperial Relief Fund of India ... ..	1,00,000
To the Admiralty in aid of the Anti-Submarine Campaign ... ..	15,00,000
"Our Day" collections for the "Red Cross" ... ..	1,00,000
Special donation towards the prosecution of the war. ... ..	15,00,000
To Their Majesties for the relief of the sufferers from the war on the occasion of their silver wedding ... ..	3,75,000

	Rs.
Share of expenditure of Hospital ship " Loyalty" maintained by the princes of India ... ..	2,00,000
	1,91,75,000
Other subscriptions amount to	1,34,600
	1,93,09,600

(c) His Exalted Highness' Government have further been able to assist the financial situation this year in British India by a loan of 50 lakhs in silver bullion, pending the arrival of the dollar silver ordered by the Government of India in the United States of America.

(d) Under His Exalted Highness' orders, the State Mints have undertaken to coin small change for the Government of India, whose Mints are at present fully occupied in coining rupees.

(e) In this connection, it may be mentioned that the Mint and Stamp Departments have printed both the Madras War Fund Stamps and the Hyderabad Ladies' War Relief Association Stamps, and supplied them free of charge.

#### MATERIAL.

(a) The State Workshops have been fully occupied, from an early date, on munitions work. A complete

list of the articles supplied is attached, the most important works being construction of cordite boxes, shells and transport carts. The total value of the works completed and in hand is Rs. 10,00,000, in round figures. This work is paid for by the Government of India; but, as far as possible, this Government has aimed at charging only the cost price and making no profit.

(h) Supply of grass to the Remount Depot at Aurangabad. In the year 1325 Fasli, all the expenses for cutting and carting grass for the Remount Depot were borne by His Exalted Highness' Government, amounting in all to Rs. 22,000. Four rumnahs have been made over, free of rent, to the Remount Department, involving a further loss of Rs. 22,000 per annum. Government bungalows are also placed at the disposal of the Remount Officers, for which no rent is charged.

\*This is exclusive of the pay of officers and men of the Imperial Service Cavalry and is made up of regular subscriptions of 8 lakhs per mensem or 36 lakhs per annum a contribution which His Exalted Highness has undertaken to provide till the end of the war, which has now been paid for 48 months and which will continue till peace is declared.

**LIST OF MUNITION WORK DONE BY WORKSHOP DEPARTMENT SINCE THE OUTBREAK OF THE WAR.**

Nature of Work.	Quantity supplied.	AMOUNT.		
		Rs.	s.	p.
Cordite Boxes ... ..	14,898	2,26,924	8	7
Shells 18 P. R. ... ..	8,626	1,06,827	11	0

			Rs.	a	p.
Fuse needle holders	...	4,588	8,748	7	6
Cutting Implements	...	8,000	9,979	8	4
Saddles, P. & D. Swivels	...	8,460	13,128	10	9
Naves for Wheels	...	530	11,568	4	6
Axles 2nd Class C. No. 141	...	540	13,086	7	3
Transport Carts	...	1,225	2,55,215	13	6
Fuse needle holders	...	1,536	1,054	14	4
Thimbles (steel for ropes)	...	52,000	5,055	8	10
Tin Labels Grass Farms	...	11,10,000	6,507	6	0
Wheels special No. 202 I.P.	...	230	81,625	9	5
Protractors and Scales (Mathematical instruments used by the Artillery)	...	200	469	0	0
Total	...		6,84,987	14	0

*Work in hand.**Approximate cost.*

Tin Labels	...	21,80,000	12,262	8	0
Wheels special No. 202 I. P. Mark II	...	15	1,645	0	0
Rings rope Picketting I. P Mark II	...	34,000	5,312	8	0
Shackles Large	...	50,000	89,583	5	4
Shackles I. P. Mark II. Mountings	...	50,000	81,250	0	0
Pole Draughts I. P. No. 10	...	2,000	40,000	0	0
Shoulder badges	...	12,000	5,281	4	0
Hooks trace rope, short	...	4,000 pairs	5,711	13	0
Collars adjusting 2nd class 'G' capped wheels	...	3,200	6,885	15	0
Nut pipe boxes, Labour only	...	1,000	1,000	0	0
Dust caps	...	1,000	1,000	0	0
Machining pipe boxes	...	1,000	2,000	0	0
Gauges & checks for No. 80	...	758	1,961	6	7
Mekometers G. S. Reels for range-finding	...	520	2,000	0	0
Brake shoes	...	150	5,000	0	0

		Rs. a. p.		
Tripods for Howitzers, labour only ...	40	4,000	0	0
Plugs, Aerial, Earth & Telephone ...	600	1,200	0	0
		<hr/>		
Total ...		2,16,098	11	11
		<hr/>		
GRAND TOTAL ...		9,00,981	9	11
		<hr/>		



## CHAPTER III.

### H. H. Maharaja Gaekwar of Baroda.

*His Majesty's appeal to our sense of patriotic unity has not fallen upon deaf ears and Indians will do their utmost to ensure the triumph of right over might to which we look forward with entire confidence.*

#### MAHARAJA GAEKWAR AT THE DELHI WAR CONFERENCE.

H. H. Maharaja Gaekwar Sir Sayaji Rao III G. C. S. I., etc., etc., is a Mahratta ruler of a territory whose area is 8,570 square miles, population 20 lakhs and annual revenue about Rs. 1,80,00,000. The military forces of the state consisted before the war of 3,562 horse, 4,988 soldiers and 38 guns. His Highness is one of the most enlightened and progressive rulers of native states and Baroda is admittedly the best administered state in India. In some respects it is more advanced than even British India. The Gaekwar's and his Government's contributions to the war in men, money and materials are detailed below :—

#### *I.—Men.*

(a) One hundred fifty-seven men from the State Regular Forces allowed to join the British Army and Rs. 1,447 due by them to the State on account of loans advanced to them by the Pedhi were written off.



H. H. MAHARAJA GAEKWAR OF BARODA.





(b) Three European officers from the State Army allowed to proceed to England on special leave to join the Expeditionary Force. A fourth officer was also granted special leave to join the British Army at Muttra.

(c) The services of Doctor C. A. L. Mayer, M. D. (London) placed at the disposal of the British Government and he was paid a salary of Rs. 1,200, per mensem from the Baroda Treasury in addition to the salary drawn by him in British service.

(d) Doctor Y. V. Modak was granted special leave to take up a temporary commission in the Indian Medical Service.

(e) Two hundred sowars and 6 officers deputed to Muttra to train remounts.

(f) The services of the State Officer placed at the disposal of Government for appointment as D. A. R. O. for the Baroda State.

(g) Recruiting.

The number of subjects of the State who joined the British Indian Army up to the end of November, 1918, as combatants, non-combatants, skilled and unskilled labourers was 1417.

## II.—Money Gifts.

(i) By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar.—

	Rs.
(a) For the provision and equipment of Aeroplanes. ... ..	5,00,000
(b) For the War Gift Fund ... ..	5,00,000
(c) For the purpose of Ford Vans ... ..	15,00,000
(d) Contribution of Rs. 12,000 a month from January, 1916, to April, 1919 (it will continue till the end of the War) ...	4,80,000

Total 29,80,000

(ii) Contribution to Imperial Indian War Relief Fund.

(a) By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar ... ..	2,10,000
(b) Other subscriptions ... ..	84,586

Total 2,94,586

(iii) Contribution to Prince of Wales' Fund.—	Rs.
By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar	30,000
(iv) Red Cross contributions.—	
(a) By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar to "Our Day Fund" ...	35,000
Red Cross Fund, Simla ...	5,000
(b) Other subscriptions ...	27,464
Total	67,464
Grand Total of all money gifts ...	82,74,950
Miscellaneous donations to several institutions and relief funds in Europe and India organised in connection with the war ...	75,937

Note.—The above figures do not include the sum of Rs. 8,454 spent in entertaining British Troops proceeding to the front via Baroda.

### III.—Materials, etc.

#### (i) Free gifts—

- (a) 154 horses from the State Cavalry. Rs.  
valued at ... 55,786
- (b) 13 tents of the aggregate value of Rs. 8,722, from State Khangi Department for hospital use with the Expeditionary Force in France.
- (c) 12 sets of chessmen sent by His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar to Her Excellency Lady Willingdon.

#### (ii) Loans—

- (a) The Jaya Mahals Palace in Bombay with bungalow attached lent as a hospital for officers.
- (b) One State Steam Tug length 54 feet over all lent for transport purposes.

#### (iii) Supplied on payment—

- (a) 157 horses from the State Cavalry.

**(b) Railway Stock —**

4 X class engines.

35 Open boggies.

4 Brake Vans.

4 Trolleys.

22 Steel Open 4 wheeled wagons.

**(c) 3 Dumpers and 3 theodolites.****IV.—Purchases of War Loan.**

(i) By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar—	Rs.
(a) War Loan Bonds of 1917 ...	32,00,000
(b) War Loan Bonds of 1917 purchased by conversion of old G. P Notes ... ..	38,00,000
(c) War Loan Bonds (1928) of the second Indian War Loan ... ..	30,00,000
(ii) By Her Highness the Maharani Gaekwar—	
War Loan Bonds of 1917 as a contribution to the Bombay Women's War Loan ...	2,00,000
(iii) By Khan Sahib Framji Cowasji, contractor—	
Baroda War Loan Bonds of 1917 ...	2,00,000
<hr/> Total 1,04,00,000	
(iv) Non-Official War Loan purchases by State subjects ... ..	8,24,180



## CHAPTER IV.

---

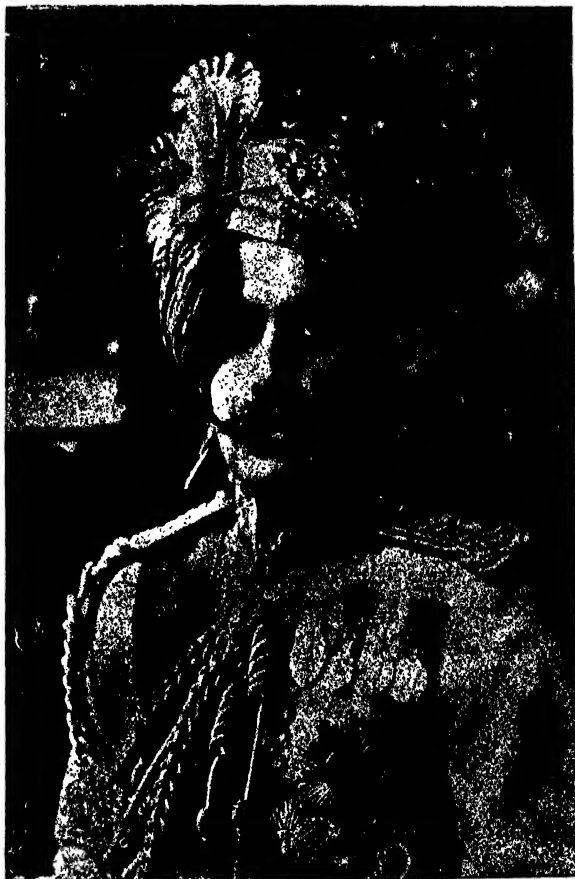
### H. H. The Maharaja of Bikaner.

*The loyalty of the Bikaner Princes is traditional ; for the Maharaja of the time not only supported the British with troops, gun and supplies in the first and second Sikh campaigns but also rendered them assistance in the Mutiny by personally leading the Bikaner contingent which served under General Van Cortland.*

*' The Agent to the Governor-General in Rajputana at that time wrote about Maharaja Sir Sirdar Singhji as follows :—*

*' No Prince in Rajputana save Bikaner took the field in person in our favour without hesitation. No Prince gave the like aid in searching out and rescuing fugitives, though all gave their hospitable shelter and support and no other prince exhibited such purely disinterested motives in giving us his active assistance and none but the Bikaner Raja suffered so heavily a loss of Rajput kindred and chiefs whilst fighting purely in our cause.'*

*Well has His Highness the present Maharaja followed in the foot-steps of his forefathers. His Highness was the first prince in India when the outbreak of the great war was imminent in 1914 to offer his own sword and all the resources of the Bikaner State for*



*Our first and foremost consideration and constant care is at all times to render what little service we can to our Emperor and the Empire for, I hope, it is hardly necessary for me to assure you that we are all deeply imbued with feelings of profound veneration and devoted attachment to our gracious Sovereign and his Throne.*

II, II. THE MAHARAJA OF BIKANER.



*the honour, safety and welfare of His Imperial Majesty and the British Dominions.*

LIEUT.-COL. MANNERS SMITH.

His Highness Maharaja Raj Rajeshwar Narendra Shromani Sir Ganga Singh Bahadur of Bikaner was born on 3rd October, 1880 and succeeded to the *gaddi* of his State in 1887. He was educated at the Mayo College, Ajmer. His Highness comes of the same clan of Rajputs to which His Highness Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh of Jodhpur belongs. The attitude of the Bikaner House towards the British Government in the days of the Mutiny of 1857 is apparent from Colonel Manners Smith's speech an extract from which has been quoted above. His Highness the present Maharaja himself raised the Imperial Service Camel Corps which has seen active service in China and Somaliland, not to mention the present war. This famous Camel Corps has been in action in more foreign lands than any other unit of the Imperial Service Troops maintained by the Indian Native States. When only 20 years of age His Highness commanded the Corps in the British Expeditionary Force to China in 1900-01 and two years later the Corps did most valuable service in Somaliland.

The moment it was announced that war has been declared between England and Germany His Highness the Maharaja wrote to His Excellency the Viceroy offering both the Camel Corps and the Sardul Light Infantry for immediate service and proposing to enroll



and equip 25,000 of his subjects as a special emergency Imperial Service contingency. The Government of India did not, however, find it necessary to accept the offer in its entirety but the Viceroy intimated that it would be gratefully borne in mind for future consideration. His Excellency, however, approved the supplementary proposal of His Highness to increase his armed forces temporarily by 3,000 men to garrison the outlying districts of the state.

The services of His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner and his state in this war have been quite worthy of their position in India. It must be remembered that though the state covers an area of 23,311 square miles yet it is most thinly populated (600,000) and is productive of very small revenue. His Highness the Maharaja himself described these services in May, 1918, in a speech before the Delhi War Conference.

“ As for myself personally and my state, I would, with Your Excellency's permission, like very briefly to deal with some of the more important details only of the service which we have loyally attempted to render to His Imperial Majesty the King-Emperor since the outbreak of the war. My troops, nearly two and a half times their former sanctioned field service strength, have been continuously away on active service since August, 1914. We have not only maintained them at full strength in the field and kept a substantial standing reserve but when a further reinforcement of men,

running into three figures, was sent in March last the deficiency was made good within practically a fortnight. Close on 1,000 men have been enlisted in the Indian army from my state almost wholly through the state War Board since the 1st January of this year, a record which, in spite of our comparatively limited number of fighting men we have hopes of having in the future. Financially, too, our war expenditure and contributions have been, I hope, commensurate with our resources. My state headed the list in the War Loan subscriptions in Rajputana last year, whilst we secured the fifth place amongst all the states in India as regards our contributions. Subsequent to the exchange of telegrams between Your Excellency and the Prime Minister I telegraphed several days ago to Your Excellency renewing the assurances communicated at the outbreak of the war of my whole hearted loyal support and once again placing my personal service and all my troops and resources of my state at His Imperial Majesty's command. We fully realise that the interests of the British Empire and the state being so closely bound together, the state stands or falls with the British Empire and, please God, it will be the former. In short, we have always endeavoured to render the utmost service in our power to the King-Emperor and we can only say that the efforts of myself and my people will not be relaxed but rather increased as far as is humanly possible. Your Excellency, I feel

confident that that will also be the attitude of all the ruling princes throughout India and that our constant care will be to prove ourselves worthy of our position as allies and friends."

These services and the gallant exploits of the Maharaja's Forces in various theatres of the war, great and valuable as they admittedly were, were insignificant compared to the political services rendered by His Highness personally during the period of the war, both in India and in Great Britain.

His Highness Maharaja Ganga Singh of Bikaner is respected throughout India both by his brother chiefs and the educated classes as he is as loyal to the British Crown as to his country. To him loyalty to the one is not different from loyalty to the other. He is a thorough believer in the democratic form of government. In the course of a Press interview he mentioned that his reasons for inaugurating, a few years ago, a representative assembly in his state was not to meet any clamant demand, for none existed, but to train his people along the path of constitutional development. The native states, he added, could not remain unaffected by the growing association of the people in British India with the responsibilities of administration.

In the year, 1917, His Highness the Maharaja was selected by the Government of India as one of the three representatives of India (for the first time) at the Imperial War Conference. A number of Ruling Chiefs

and representative public men of India gathered at the Taj Mahal Hotel to bid farewell to His Highness the Maharaja and the princes and people both acknowledged the Maharaja to be a fit representative of India. H. H. the Jam Sahib said ; " As a fit representative of the Ruling Princes the Maharaja of Bikaner would return with the fruits of victory and that His Highness would represent Indian interests faithfully and ably at the Conference. They were all filled with joy at the recognition of the great merits of a worthy ally by His Majesty's government,"

In the address read by the Hon'ble Mr. Lallubhai Samaldas, president of the Indian Merchants Chamber and Bureau, on the same occasion, the following words were spoken to His Highness the Maharaja :—

" Maharaja Sahib, this is the first occasion on which a representative of the ruling princes of the native states of India is asked to participate in the work of an Imperial character. In view of the splendid services rendered by the princes to the Empire in this world-wide war it is but fitting that their interests should be represented before the Secretary of State by one of the princes themselves and who is better fitted to voice the views of these chiefs than you, Sir, who have been, it is an open secret now, the initiator and the organiser the Chiefs' Conference. We have reasons to believe that Your Highness has not only concerned yourself with the safeguarding of the interests of native states

but that you have kept in touch with the national movement and have interested yourself in questions relating to the material and moral progress of the whole country. My Committee believe that if India is to take her proper place in the work of the reconstruction of the British Empire, she must present a united front in which the peoples and princes of India work hand in hand."

While in England, His Highness did not confine his activities and interest in the problems before the Imperial War Conference and Cabinet but saw many places, addressed many a gathering, wrote many an article to the British Press to interest the British public in Indian matters. His Highness's speeches on various occasions during this visit of his to the United Kingdom were published in a pamphlet form on his return to India. A perusal of these speeches shows with what care His Highness has studied the Indian questions and with what broad-mindedness and statesmanship he has tackled the problems, which are many, dealt with by him. The temptation to quote from these speeches is great indeed but space prevents the same.

As to the actual work done by the Maharaja on the Imperial War Conference, let His Highness the Maharaja of Patiala speak; "..... and when we review the work of His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner, we experience a thrill of pride. By his exalted

birth, his personal virtues, his political perception, his devotion to the cause of the Princes of India, his sympathy with the people's aspirations and his eminent services to the Empire he was singularly qualified to influence the counsels of a conference which met to discuss the problems of the political progress and reconstruction of the Empire. The published accounts merely give us a glimpse of the great and valuable work done by His Highness. It is already a matter of history how well His Highness succeeded with his ability and acumen in focussing attention on Indian affairs. The Ruling Princes of India are particularly grateful to him for having dispelled the illusion that there was any conflict between the interests of British India and the Indian States or their rulers."

The Prime Minister of Canada on his return to his dominions, speaking in the Canadian House of Commons, said :—

"The Indian representatives were the Maharaja of Bikaner, one of the Indian Princes and a man of splendid loyalty and devotion who governs his country along progressive lines and who has contributed in every possible way to the winning of the war..."

His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner was again selected in 1918, when the war was over, to represent the Indian Ruling Princes on the Imperial War Conference and Cabinet and later on, on the Peace Conference itself. As at the time of writing the Peace

Conference is still in session it is too early to say anything of His Highness's activities on this occasion which is assuredly the most important one in the history of the world.

His Highness's sympathies with the aspirations of British India are equally marked; the following words culled from a speech delivered by him at the Luncheon given by the Parliamentary Association (United Kingdom Branch) to the Indian delegates in the House of Commons on 24th April, 1917, are significant.

"Regarding India's desire for ultimate self-government and autonomy within the British Empire I am prepared to admit that it presents a difficult problem. But is the difficulty such as to be insoluble by British statesmanship and British good will and sympathy or are the existing conditions in India so hopelessly irreconcilable with Indian aspirations as to render the question merely academic, not worth serious thought but fit to be relegated into the background only to be brought out in a dim and distant future? Certainly there is diversity of race. But does not even the United Kingdom consist of three different races. And is not Canada inhabited by, at least, as great a diversity of races and nationalities? and what about South Africa? And when talking of different races and customs as existing in India we must bear in mind that India is not a country, but really a vast

continent ; it is not a state but an empire within an empire."

As for reforms for native states His Highness is equally anxious. It was he who initiated the proposal of a Ruling Princes' Conference. In the same speech from which has been taken the above quotation the following paragraph is *apropos* this subject : —

" As rulers governing such a vast area in India, we, however, feel that if we are to keep abreast of the times, and of the conditions prevailing and likely to prevail in British India and that if we are fully to secure and to retain our proper place in the constitution of the Empire, there must be developments we feel. We feel that we must have a regularly assigned and more definite place in the construction of the Empire by the institution, at an early date, of a Council or an Assembly of Princes formed on proper lines where important questions concerning ourselves and our people, on the one hand, and the British Government on the other, can be discussed and settled just as Legislative Councils exist in British India. I should perhaps make it clear that we have no desire whatever to encroach upon the affairs of British India, any more that we should relish any outside interference with our own internal affairs. These ideas which have been maturing for some years were definitely and officially brought forward by a large and representative number of Ruling Prince at a meeting convened



by Lord Chelmsford at Delhi in October last and the Viceroy's speech and the attitude of the Government of India lead us to hope that the question is receiving sympathetic consideration."

It seems superfluous to say that Lord Chelmsford and Mr. Montagu have, in their Report on Indian Constitutional Reforms, recommended the establishment of a Council of Ruling Princes as indicated by the Maharaja of Bikaner.







*Devotion to the British Crown is writ large on every page of Indian History. It is a heritage of imperishable glory and every one of us is proud of it.*

HER HIGHNESS THE BEGAM OF BHOPAL.

## CHAPTER V.

---

### Her Highness the Begum of Bhopal.

*The loyal and splendid services of your Highness's house to the British Crown are written in History and I need not dwell on them. But it is appropriate that I should remind my hearers on this occasion of the assistance which your Highness has rendered in so many varied ways towards the prosecution of the war.*

*Four years ago your Highness placed all the resources of your state at His Majesty's disposal and shortly afterwards in company with His Exalted Highness the Nizam you published a manifesto which was of high value to the Government as it testified publicly to the loyal support of the Ruler and people of the second Mahomedan state in India. You have since presented to Government valuable motor-cars and launches and an armoured aeroplane besides making many generous subscriptions to the various war funds and charities including a donation of two lakhs to the hospitalship "Loyalty". You also handed over to us all your artillery horses and the state has, in addition trained for us many fresh animals which have been despatched to the various*

*fronts. Your Imperial Service Cavalry Regiment has served from the last three years in Upper India and is now employed on the Waziristan Frontier. I was much gratified recently to read a highly creditable report on the regiment after their inspection by Major-General Woodyatt. Your Highness has invested large sums in the War Loan and has encouraged the nobles and public of Bhopal to subscribe liberally to it. Lastly your Highness has, on this occasion of my visit to the state, offered to me for war expenses the generous contribution of Rs 50,000 annually for the duration of the war. It is with very great pleasure that I accept this offer and I shall, at an early date, communicate it to His Majesty's government. In connection with your Highness' War Services I would add that your Highness's presence in Delhi in spite of the personal inconvenience involved, on the occasion of the War Conference in April was an evidence of your staunch and unflinching loyalty to the Throne. In all these and many other ways your Highness has assisted the British Empire and the Government of India in the business of the war.*

H. E. LORD CHELMSFORD AT BHOPAL.

The services rendered by Her Highness Nawab Sultan Jehan Begum; G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., G.B.E., C. I., Ruler of Bhopal deserve special mention in this volume for three important reasons. She is not only a ruler of an important native state in India but

she is a Musalman whom her co-religionists in British India respect and follow and above all she is a distinguished and talented lady.

The House of Bhopal has ever been noted for its staunch friendship with and loyalty to the British Government, these good relations dating as far back as 1778 in which year the British Forces marching from Bengal to Bombay received valuable assistance from this state. In the dark days of the Mutiny which occurred during the rule of Sikandar Jehan Begum, no chief in the length and breadth of India proved, as Lord Hardinge testified, a more staunch ally than Her Highness. In recognition of these services Queen Victoria granted to Her Highness the Berasia pargana which now forms part of the state. The state maintained before the breakout of the war a regiment of Imperial Service Cavalry, known as the Victoria Lancers and composed of five troops of Musalmans and one of Sikhs which cost the state about Rs. 2 lakhs annually. The state also maintained for Imperial Service half a battalion (four companies) of infantry which is known as the Sultania Imperial Service Infantry.

There were also state troops both regular and irregular, the total strength of which was 1,744 men and which cost about 3½ lakhs a year to the state.

The present ruler of the state was born in July, 1858, and succeeded her mother to the *gaddi* in 1901. The Begum personally conducts the administration

of her state which has an area of 6,859 square miles, a population of 728,453, and an annual revenue of about 55 lakhs of rupees. In 1874 the Begum was married to Nawab Ahmad Ali Khan, a member of the Afghan clan, the Mirzai Khel from which the Bhopal family is descended. Her Highness is very well educated in English, Persian and Arabic. She toured in Europe in 1911 and wherever she went she was received with every mark of esteem and personal regard and her visit to Paris was an occasion of special interest. As stated by herself Her Highness "derived considerable benefit from a close study of the culture and civilisation of the European nations." She is a lady of advanced social views and takes special interest in the advancement of the members of her own sex both in and outside her state; the rapid progress of education in the Musalman community of India owes considerably to the encouragement given by Her Highness.

In December, 1909, Lord Minto, the then Viceroy and Governor General of India had, in the course of his speech at Bhopal, remarked that Her Highness was probably the only lady who had seen active service. Three years later when H. E. Lord Hardinge visited the state Her Highness, alluding to Lord Minto's above remark, said in a speech, "I certainly went through the trials of active service in the course of my pilgrimage to the Hedjaz and I beg to assure

Your Excellency that in time of emergency not only my cavalry and infantry regiments with their own transport services are ready to take the field but I personally and the members of my house also will consider it an honour and a pleasure to place our services at the disposal of our Emperor and his government. In the history of Bhopal the participation of women in actual warfare is not a strange phenomenon. In the year, 1812, the women of this city courageously and successfully withstood an onslaught of the investing (*sic*) force till such time as reinforcement arrived."

When the European war broke out in 1914, it was, therefore, no wonder that Her Highness the Begum of Bhopal was one of the first ruling chiefs who placed their personal services and the entire resources of their states at the disposal of the British Government. Her Highness' eldest son Colonel Nawab Nasarullah Khan left for France with his regiment, the 9th Bhopal Infantry of the Indian Army, but stricken by a painful illness soon after leaving Karachi he was dropped at Aden under medical advice, an event for which he himself and his mother have been all along very sorry.

In November, 1914, the participation of Turkey in the war against our King-Emperor and his allies created some uneasiness in the minds of the Indian Musalmans. But the influential rulers of Musalman



states like Hyderabad, Bhopal and Rampur, at once issued manifestoes to the effect that Musalmans should not swerve an inch in their loyalty to the British Empire. Her Highness, in a notable utterance addressed her co-religionists on the subject. The following words from the address are worth quoting here. She said :—

“ Is it not a matter for regret then that Turkey should without provocation and that, too, after the Ottoman Government had, more than once, given assurances of Turkey's neutrality, join hands with the enemies of our British Government ? All gentlemen like you have read, I suppose, in the papers, how the British Government is now, as ever, having Mahomedan interests at heart. I have every hope that my subjects will show their customary zeal in carrying out my wishes and I have no doubt they will follow me and my ancestors and predecessors as well as their own forbears, in remaining firm in their loyalty and devotion to the British Crown.”

That Her Highness' attitude towards the British Empire has been one of most devoted loyalty is clear from the following speech which she delivered in the Delhi War Conference in April, 1918. Said she :—

“ With your permission I rise to say very few words in support of the resolution moved in such eloquent terms by His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar. There are times when words are a poor vehicle for one's

thoughts and I assure Your Excellency that I find it difficult adequately to express the feelings awakened in me by the gracious message from His Majesty the King-Emperor, feelings which are shared by princes and peoples alike throughout the country. Devotion to the British Crown is writ large on every page of Indian history, It is a heritage of unperishable glory and every one of us is proud of it. Consecrated by a union which has brought to India peace, prosperity and happiness, the outstanding and imperative needs of this country, India has been rightly called the brightest jewel of the British Crown and in this hour of supreme necessity when the British-Empire is stemming the on-rush of the forces of barbarism which threatens to shatter the whole fabric of human law and justice it is only natural that the King-Emperor's words should evoke in this land a dutiful and loyal response.

" India, Your Excellency, will never fail the Empire in the hour\* of need. I trust that Your Excellency will, in the name of the whole country, assure His Imperial Majesty that in the development of our resources, in the fullest utilization of our man power, nay, in response to any call which the Empire might make at this fateful juncture in the history of the world, India will leave nothing undone to justify the confidence, the love, the sympathy with which the King-Emperor has always honored us. The need

of the Empire is undoubtedly India's opportunity, it is our opportunity for adding to our brilliant record, of proving once more in this ordeal of blood and fire that we are really worthy of the message we have received from our King-Emperor. Now that the war has entered upon a more intense phase we assure you that it will never be said of India that in this supreme crisis India when weighed in the balance was found wanting."

Her Highness's Regiment of Imperial Service (Victoria) Lancers was on garrison duty in British India throughout the duration of the war.

Below is given a list of donations, contributions, gifts and war loan investments which the Bhopal State made in order to help the successful prosecution of the war

**HER HIGHNESS' CONTRIBUTION IN CONNECTION  
WITH THE WAR.**

	Rs. a. p.
1. Prince of Wales' Relief Fund, £6,000 ...	90,000 0 0
2. Imperial War Relief Fund of India ...	1,00,000 0 0
3. Hospitalship "Loyalty." ...	2,00,000 0 0
4. St. John's Ambulance Association ...	5,000 0 0
5. Officer's Families Fund ..	2,000 0 0
6. Veseline for troops ...	1,000 0 0
7. Jhansi Girls' Brigade ..	100 0 0
8. One set of 10 bed units ....	
9. Fifty trained Artillery horses ..	
10. Six motor-cars and chauffeurs ...	
11. Training of Government horses in batches of 100 at a time (for artillery). Expenses incurred ..	10,297 0 0

Rs. a. p.

12.	Sixty recruits for Ambulance work ..			
13.	Purchases of Government Promissory notes worth five lakhs of rupees .. ..			
14.	For the use of the troops ... ..	25,000	0	0
15.	St. John's Ambulance Association, Bombay, 500 copies of the "Kuran" and 1,487 copies of religious tracts for the use of the Mahomedan soldiers ... ..			
16.	Thirteen signallers from the Sultania In- fantry .. ..			
17.	St. John Ambulance Association, Bombay, 500 copies of the "Kuran" for the use of the Mahomedan soldiers ... ..			
18.	Sent to Political Agent as subscription to- wards official committee for the relief of Belgian victims of the war ... ..			
	199, Piccadilly, London .. ..	5,000	0	0
19.	Maritime League, London. £80 .. ..	1,200	0	0
20.	Khaki Fund for the relief of prisoners in Germany .. ..	1,000	0	0
21.	Two motor Launches .. ..	14,000	0	0
22.	Lucknow Hospital (an artificial leg and an invalid chair) ... ..	557	4	0
23.	The National War Loan (England) £18,300...	1,99,500	0	0
24.	Ford motor-car for the War Hospital at Bombay .. ..	2,499	12	0
25.	British women's hospital, London. £200	3,000	0	0
26.	Women's Branch of the Bombay Presidency War and Relief Fund .. ..	1,000	0	0
27.	Women's Branch of the Bombay Presidency War and Relief Exhibition Fund ... ..	1,000	0	0
28.	General Benevolent Fund of the war hos- pitals .. ..	1,000	0	0
29.	British Empire League, Annual Subscription. £5 .. ..	75	0	0

80. The 9th Bhopal Infantry.	Mittens...109 prs.			
	Comforters, 54 prs.			
	Socks, 87 prs.			
	Scarves, 188			
	Mints, 112			
	Shirts, 48			
31. The War Gifts Depot, Bombay.	Goats, 86			
	Balaclava caps, 10			
	Socks, 1802 prs.			
	Mittens, 17			
	Sleeping socks, 1 pr.			
	Bandages, 3272			
32. St. John Ambulance Association of Jerusalem	Scarves, 14			
	Balaclava cap, 1			
		Rs.	a.	p.
		6,000	0	0
33. Young Men's Christian Association, Lahore, for the Relief of British Indian troops in Mesopotamia	.. ..	1,815	12	0
34. Lord Mayor's Fund for Belgian children	.. ..	1,000	0	0
35. Mosque at Basra	.. ..	5,000	0	0
36. Great War Sale Fund, Bombay	.. ..	1,000	0	0
37. Gaekwad Officer's Hospital Bombay	.. ..	1,000	0	0
38. For the women's Branch Bombay Presidency War and Relief Fund, Bombay	.. ..	500	0	0
39. For the Sepoys of the Indian Army	... 12 comforters 8 pair socks			
40. Association Nationale Des Orpheline De La Guerre c/o Mr. E. Courmount, Agent Messa- geries Maritimes, Bombay	.. ..	500	0	0
41. Monster Lucky Bag, Simla	.. ..	750	0	0
42. National Rumanian Relief Fund	.. ..	875	0	0
43. The Indian War Loan	.. ..	6,00,000	0	0
44. Donation to the British Red Crescent Society London. £100	.. ..	1,500	0	0

			Rs.	a.	p.
45.	Kitchener Memorial Fund .. ..	...	3,000	0	0
46.	Donation to Queen Mary's Technical School for disabled Indian soldiers ... ..	...	2,000	0	0
47.	Sehore " Our Day " Fund ... ..	...	500	0	0
48.	In aid to the War Expenses for 2 aeroplanes		38,750	0	0
49.	Bhopal Our Day Fund ... ..	...	21,070	0	0
50.	" Our Day " Allahabad Calender Fund ...		500	0	0
51.	Expenditure on tents and Furniture for Our Day Celebrations, Sehore ... ..	...	142	1	0
52.	In aid of the war expenses .. ..	...	1,00,000	0	0
53.	War relief Fund given on His Imperial Majesty's Birthday Anniversary .. ..		600	0	0
54.	Queen's Hospital, London. £20 .. ..		300	0	0
55.	Montenegrin Red Cross, London. £100 ...		1,500	0	0
56.	Children's Jewel Fund, London. £50 ..		750	0	0
57.	British and Foreign Sailor Society, London. £100 .. ..	...	1,500	0	0
58.	Annual contribution to war expenses for the duration of the war .. ..	...	30,000	0	0
59.	French war Orphans' Fund ... ..		500	0	0
60.	For distribution of sweetmeats to boys and girls of Sehore School on the victory of British Arms .. ..	...	300	0	0
61.	Gadkwar Officers' Hospital, Bombay ...		500	0	0
62.	One present from Our Day Fund, Bombay ...		1,000	0	0
63.	Silver Wedding Fund ... ..	...	15,150	0	0
64.	Our Day Fund flags and stamps .. ..		100	0	0
65.	Contribution from Bhopal Municipality ..		300	0	0



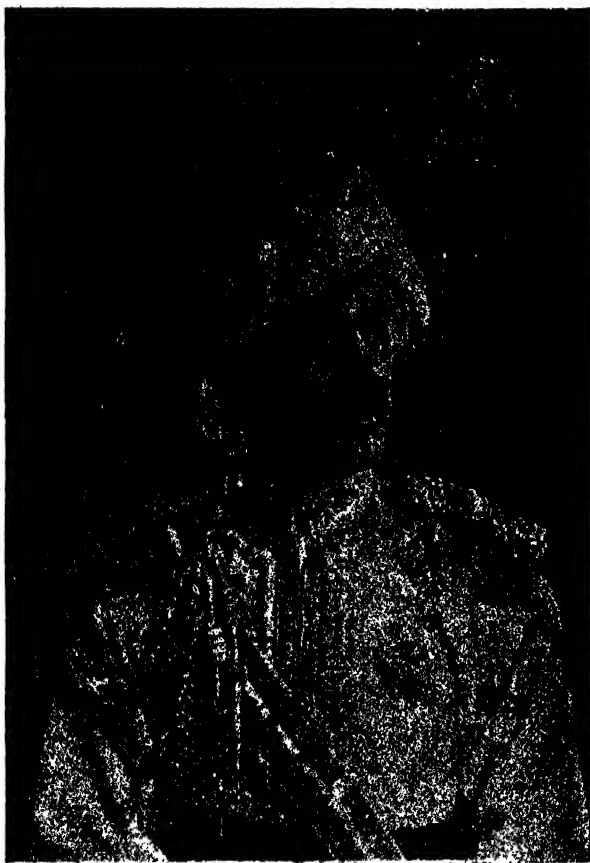
## CHAPTER VI.

---

# Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh of Jodhpur.

Major-General H. H. Maharaja Dhiraj Sir Pratap Singh is admittedly one of the foremost soldiers of the British Empire and the first soldier of India. He comes of the great Rathor Rajput family which traces its origin from the second son of Rama, the hero of the Ramayan. The deeds of valour of this clan of Rajputs are strewn over the entire history of the Moghal period in India and have been equally conspicuous during the British period as well. Colonel Tod, in his famous book "Tod's Rajasthan" has immortalised the deeds of valour of these Rajputs and nobody can read the pages of that book without a thrill of astonishment. An incident may, with advantage, be related here..

Mohandas was the head of Kampawat Rathors of Marwar. He incurred the displeasure of the Emperor Aurangzeb by a reply which was disrespectful. Aurangzeb condemned him to enter a tiger's den and contend for his life unarmed. Without a sign of fear he entered the arena where the savage beast was pacing and thus contemptuously accosted him "O tiger of the *mian* face the tiger of Jaswant (of Rajput family)



H. H. MAHARAJA SIR PRATAP SINGH.

*The veteran Sir Pratap would not be deprived of his right to serve the King-Emperor in spite of his seventy years and his nephew, the Maharaja (of Jodhpur) who is but sixteen years old is with him.*

MR. CHARLES ROBERTS.





exhibiting to the king of the forest a pair of eyes which anger and opium had rendered little less inflamed than his own. The animal startled by so unaccustomed a salutation, for a moment, looked at his visitor, put down his head, turned round and stalked away from him. "You see" explained the Rathor "that he dare not face me and it is contrary to the creed of a true Rajput to attack an enemy who dares not confront him." Even Aurangzeb who beheld the scene was surprised into admiration and presented him with gifts. This incident shows that Rathors and fear were strangers to each other. From this singular encounter he bore the name of Nahar Khan (the tiger lord).

The brave deeds performed by Rajputs in the Indian history cannot be counted. Name a few heroes like Rana Pratap, Durgadas, Jaswant, Hamir, Raj Singh, Man, and Pirthi Raj, and a volume is said.

Belonging as he does to such a distinguished clan of soldiers, there is no wonder Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh has made a name in bravery and valour which is unsurpassed in modern history. Sir Pratap, as he is lovingly called by his friends and admirers both in Europe and India, was born on 21st October, 1845, at Jodhpur and is thus 76 years old now. From whatever standpoint one judges him the conclusion is irresistible that he is a wonderful man. Although he is not educated at all in the sense in which education is regarded in these days,

he is a man who is most keen about the educational progress of his countrymen. His purse is always wide open when he is asked for money for education. The advance of education in the Jodhpur State where he has spent the most of his life as Prime Minister and Regent has been almost phenomenal during recent years. He has earned the gratitude of his Rajput brethren of the state by establishing a Rajput school on a very grand scale in the state where the children receive their training free of all expenses. Even food and clothing are supplied to them at the expense of the state. As a general administrator and statesman the present advanced condition of the state bears irrefutable testimony to his qualities in these respects. Coming to matters of lesser importance Sir Pratap Singh is an excellent shot and sportsman. As a polo player he is supposed to be one of the finest in the world. In his private life he is very unassuming and simple. A certain reserve of manner, an air of aloofness and superiority which the world has learnt to associate with the possession of wealth and power are conspicuous by their absence in his case.

It is not, however, as a brilliant administrator or a fine polo player, an enthusiastic educationist or a keen sportsman that Sir Pratap's name will shine in the firmament of Indian history. His name will be remembered by the future world as a warrior who revived once

more the traditions of Indian chivalry and gave to the world such a fine exhibition of that martial spirit which has ever been a Rajput's first virtue. Sir Partab Singh is a soldier to the tip of his fingers and gallantry is the breath of his nostrils.

Whenever India or the British Empire has been in need of military assistance Sir Pratap has been the first to offer his services, personal and otherwise. He served on the staff of the Generals Commanding both in the Mohmund Expedition of 1897 and in the Tirah campaign in 1898. In 1900 he went with the British force to China in command of the Jodhpur Lancers which owe their origin to his own initiative. After leading a life crowded with heart-stirring incidents Sir Pratap settled down to the peaceful and comparatively hum-drum existence of the ruler of the state and it was supposed by his countrymen that with age and with lack of opportunity the sword had been sheathed for ever and a glorious and eventful military career had at last drawn to a close. But this was not to be. As soon as the European war broke out and the news came down to India the martial spirit which had long been dormant was kindled to a flame and the veteran soldier again buckled his sword. He seemed to realise in this event his lifelong ambition of dying a brave soldier's death; as according to him "to die in battle is not to die." He would not be deprived of his right to serve his

king and country at such a time and he went to the struggle with a spirit, the spirit in which his ancestors put on their saffron robes, the natural sign of *combat a outrance*. It is worthy of note that on landing in France Sir Pratap refused to be attached to the personal staff of General French and insisted on staying with the Jodhpur Lancers in the fighting line.

He was not content to go to the field of action and leave his grand nephew Maharaja Sir Sumer Singh, a boy of 17 years only (alas! no more) behind. Sir Pratap Singh fought on various battle fields during the war. He came back to India when the Maharaja's wedding was to be celebrated in 1915 and again when the Maharaja died in 1918 to take up the administration of the state as Maharaja Regent. The services of his Jodhpur Lancers, the famous Sardar Risala composed of little men and keen, great horsemen, equally efficient with sword and lance, the first Imperial Service Corps to land in Europe have been mentioned in several despatches. The following telegram was, for instance, sent by General Allenby from Alexandria, on September, 24th to Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh, "Congratulate you on the brilliant exploits of your regiment, the Jodhpur Lancers who, on the 23rd September, took the town of Haifa, at a gallop, killing many Turks with the lance in the streets of the town and capturing 700 prisoners. Their gallant Colonel Dalpat Singh fell gloriously at the head

of his regiment. He was buried with full military honours this afternoon."

In a battle of September 24th, Major General H.M. Macandrew, Commanding 55th Cavalry Division, Palestine, wrote :—" My dear Pratap, The Jodhpur Lancers as usual did splendidly. Their charge across the river with 8 machine-guns and six guns firing on them was a great sight. I am so sorry that you had fever and were not with us, but I hope to see you back soon."

The following incident was related in the presence of the writer of these pages by a gentleman of an aristocratic Rajput family of the United Provinces who had been for a long time on active service in this war. The incident is described here as it throws a lurid light on a very important characteristic of Sir Pratap :—

The gentleman happened to meet Sir Pratap in an officer's camp in France. From his stately built and soldierly appearance Sir Pratap at once recognised him to be a Rajput and had a long conversation with him. Sir Pratap visited him in the latter's camp the next day. He came on horse back, unaccompanied by groom or a servant, dismounted from his horse, tied the animal to a tree and peeped into the tent. He was going back when a servant of the gentleman accosted him as to who he was. On being informed of his identity the servant ran to his master and acquainted him with the fact. The

gentleman came out and took the visitor inside his tent and offered a cushioned chair which he would not accept, but when an ordinary chair was offered to and accepted by Sir Pratap, he said in effect : 'Excuse me I had peeped into your tent and seeing that there were so many luxurious costly cushioned and embroidered chairs, a number of pairs of boots and shoes and slippers and a dozen servants I thought that the tent belonged to some Raja and not to a Rajput soldier. I had always thought that a soldier did not require all this paraphernalia of comforts and luxuries. Look at me. I am mostly my own servant. I am not ashamed even to clean and polish my boots, to harness my horse, in fact to do anything. I could very well afford to roll in luxuries had I only wished but then I would not have become a soldier.' The gentleman on invitation went to see Sir Pratap Singh after a few days and found to his astonishment that every word he had spoken was true.

Blessed is the British Empire which possesses a man of Sir Pratap's type !









COLONEL HIS HIGHNESS, ALIJAH,  
FARZAND-I-DILPIZIR-I-DAULAT-I-INGLISHIA, MUKHLIS-UD-DAULAH,  
NASIR-UL-MULK, AMIR-UL-UMARA,  
NAWAB SIR SYED MOHAMMAD HAMID ALI KHAN BAHADUR  
MUSTAID JUNG, G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O., A.D.C., OF RAMPUR.

## CHAPTER VI (a).

### The Rampur State.

*It is very agreeable to me to have the opportunity of thanking you for the admirable services which you have done to the Queen's Government. It is not enough to say that you have stood personally loyal in the midst of disloyalty; you have done much more; you have aided the officers of the Queen by all the means at the disposal of your State, and you have by your own exertions and at much personal risk maintained order around you. But above all, you affected the safety, and provided for the comfort of a multitude of Her Majesty's Christian subjects at the time when danger pressed them.*

LORD CANNING.

[On 5th November, 1859, to H. H. Nawab Mohammed Yusuf Ali Khan of Rampur.]

*More particularly do I desire to acknowledge the invaluable and loyal assistance, which we received from our valued and distinguished neighbour, H. H. the Nawab of Rampur. In him the British Government has a staunch friend whose standards of administration are ours, whose influence and resources*

*are always at our command when required for the good of the Realm and who shares our own creed of unstinted devotion to the King Emperor.*

SIR JAMES MESTON.

The state of Rampur is the premier state of the United Provinces of Agra and Oudh. Its area is 892 sq. miles, population 543000 and annual revenue Rs. 50 lakhs. The State maintains a military force of 506 Cavalry including 313 Imperial Service Lancers, three Battalions of Infantry of which 672 strong are Imperial Service Infantry and rest local and an Artillery consisting of 28 guns.

The Nawabs of Rampur are traditionally loyal to the British Government. As early as the latter seventies of the eighteenth century Nawab Faiz Ullah Khan came forward and made an offer of all his cavalry, 2000 strong, to the Governor-General at a time when England had declared war against France.

During the troublous time of the Indian Mutiny of 1857 Nawab Mohammed Yusuf Ali Khan who was the Ruler of Rampur at the time proved a faithful friend to the British Government as is amply evident from Lord Canning's testimony quoted in the beginning of the chapter.

The present ruler of Rampur, His Highness Nawab Sir Syed Mohammed Hamid Ali Khan Bahadur G.C.I.E., G. C. V. O., A. D. C. to H. M. the King Emperor, is a true friend of the British Government. When the

news of Great Britain's declaration of war against Germany reached him he lost no time in wiring to H. E. the Viceroy that his own personal services, those of his army and the entire resources of the State could be utilised by the British Government and that his people and himself were ready to make every sacrifice in the defence of the Empire.

In November, 1914, when Turkey sided with the Central Powers against the Allies and there was some consternation in the Indian Moslem world on that account H. H. the Nawab, himself a Musalman and a ruler of a considerable Musalman population in his State, issued a proclamation to his subjects the text of which was as follows :—

“ The recent developments of the war in Europe make it proper for me to declare my views on the duty of my subjects in particular and the Mahomedans of India in general towards the British Government. They owe it not only to Government but to themselves to keep their reputation for staunch loyalty chaste and unsullied. The war is not of the Government's seeking. They did every thing to avoid it, and it is, by no means, religious. Above all the British cause is just. A time of general war as this is the best for Indian Mahomedans to realize the numerous blessings of peace which they enjoy as the outcome of British rule. The tolerance of Government may be gauged from their wise resolve even at a juncture like the

present, to respect the Holy places of Islam. Under these circumstances I enjoin my subjects and invite the Mahomedans of India to remain steadfast in their loyalty at this crisis and to do everything in their power to further the British cause, which is our cause and to scrupulously avoid doing anything which may be open to misconstruction. The traditional loyalty of my house makes it absolutely incumbent on me and my subjects to jealously preserve the reputation which has been won at a former crisis and I am perfectly confident in their implicit obedience."

His Highness not only jealously preserved the reputation of his house but considerably added to it by the service he rendered to the British Empire in this war. Within a few months of the war a detachment of the Rampur Imperial Service Infantry consisting of 373 of all ranks was sent to serve abroad under the British flag. H. H. subscribed Rs. 10,000 to the Imperial Indian Relief and Rs 7500 to the Prince of Wales Fund. In conjunction with certain other ruling princes H. H. agreed to contribute towards the cost and upkeep of the Hospitalship "Loyalty". As the Government of India was in need of trained horses, H. H. offered all the horses of his Imperial Service Lancers of which 135 animals were selected and accepted. The state also undertook to train 100 remounts for the Government in batches of 50. H. H. offered 10 Sowars of his Imperial Service Lancers to convoy Government

horses to Europe and Egypt and presented seven double-poled tents for camp hospitals in the field.

The Rampur Imperial Service Infantry did very valuable work at the front as is borne out by the following testimony given by Colonel Kitchner.

"Before leaving the station I wish to place on record my appreciation of the soldier-like manner in which the officers and men of the Rampur Infantry have performed their duties under somewhat trying circumstances while under my command."

In April, 1915, a party of Imperial Service Lancers was detailed to convoy Government horses to Europe and during the second year of the war the Rampur Durbar placed at the disposal of the Government 71 officers and men of the Imperial Service Lancers to train Remounts at Belari. To the United Provinces Special War Fund which was opened in 1915 His Highness subscribed Rs. 25000 for Motor Ambulances. He also placed at the disposal of the Government for the duration of the war his large Brook Hill estate comprising 4 houses and annexes and the kothies at Bareilly with necessary furniture for the accommodation of the sick and wounded officers and men of the army. The offer was accepted and the estate was utilised for the accommodation of the convalescent European officers of the Army".

Under auspices of His Highness a War Loan meeting was held at Rampur on 31st March, 1917, at

which His Highness's cousin, Sahebzada Syed Saadat Ali Khan, presided. The investment of 2 Lacs of Rupees by His Highness himself was announced and between thirty and forty thousand rupees was promised by others on the spot.

The Durbar lent to the Government 21 Mules from the Rampur Imperial Service Infantry Depot for transport purposes.

On the 23rd of March, 1918, the Rampur Imperial Service Infantry returned from East Africa after 3½ years of service at the front. Sahebzada Syed Raza Ali Khan Bahadur, His Highness's eldest son, announced at the Parade held to accord a welcome to the Regiment an increase of pay at the rate 10% and a reward of one month's pay for each year's service at the front.

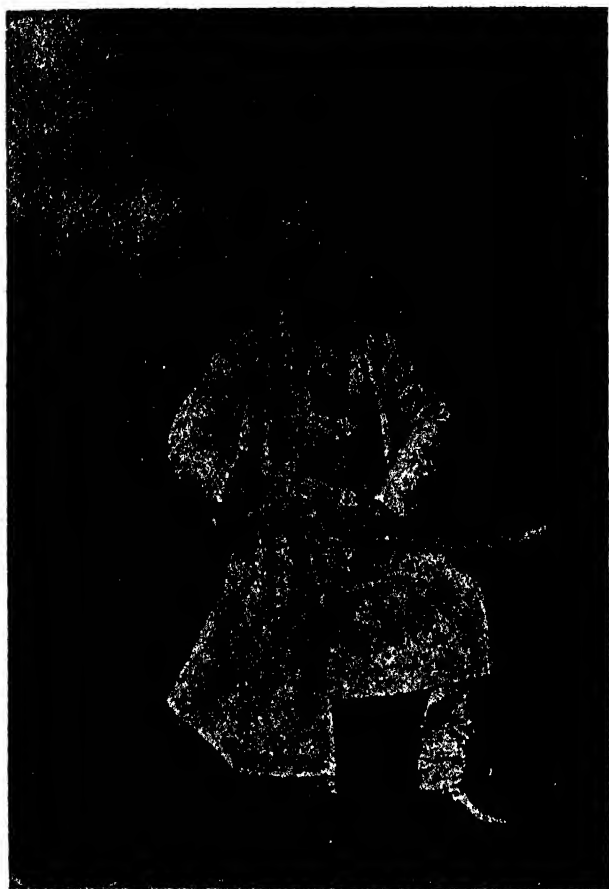
His Highness subscribed Rs. 5,000 to the Our Day Fund.

To sum up the financial assistance, His Highness's contributions amount to over 11 Lacs of Rupees including nearly 3½ lacs towards military expenditure and about a half on account of donations to the various War Funds. The exact amount of His Highness's share in the expenses of the up-keep of the Hospitalship "Loyalty" is not yet known but it is expected to be considerable. The State of Rampur invested no less than Rs. 7,10,000 in the various war loans.

---







*It is my heartfelt conviction that India's future rests on the maintenance of the British connection alone : hence we must help Great Britain in this war by every means at our disposal.*

MAHARAJA BAHADUR OF BALRAMPUR.

## CHAPTER VII.

---

### The Maharaja Bahadur of Balrampur (Oudh).

*When in consequence of the Munity arising in the Company's troops at Gonda, Sicron and Bahraich, the European Civil and Military officers were compelled to seek safety in flight they were sheltered and hospitably entertained by the Raja of Balrampur, Raja Digbijaya Singh, who, despite the threats of the mutineers, continued to afford them all the aid and protection in his power, and on their deeming Balrampur no longer a safe place of refuge, from its proximity to the insurgents, sent them on under a strong escort of his own followers to his relative the Raja of Bansi accompanying them half the distance himself.*

*For the aid thus generously extended to the British officers he is sure, during the temporary abeyance of our rule in Oudh, to be marked out for the vengeance of the mutineers and the malcontent Rajas who detest him for the attachment he has uniformly shown to our Government. If I succeed in reaching a place of safety I shall deem it my first duty to bring to the notice of the Government of India the magnanimous conduct of the Raja and impress on it a sense of obligation it lies under to him, and point out the proper mode*

of acknowledging them. If, on the other hand, I am unable to plead his cause in person I earnestly call on the Government to bestow some most signal mark of its favour on the Raja by conferring the title of Mpharaja or some higher degree on him and by making him a large grant of confiscated lands or by giving him an istimrari grant of the zamindari of Balrampur at a jama of Rs. 50,000 as to assets.

C. (afterwards SIR CHARLES) WINGFIELD,  
Commissioner and Supdt., Bahraich Division.

We cordially concur in the above and further beg to state that up to the present moment we owe our safety entirely to the generous exertions of Raja Digbijaya Singh in our behalf.

C. B. Owne, G. W. W. Boileau (Capt.), R. Campbell (Lient.), Bernard Kendal, Chas. Miles (Lient.), Edgar Clarke (Lient.), George Hale (Lient.).

There are, however, certain names which it is incumbent upon me to mention with particular gratitude. Foremost among those is the Maharaja Bahadur of Balrampur who has always been our most generous friend. He has supplied both combatants and labourers. He has invested largely in the war loans and contributed in the most lavish manner to every war fund.

I cannot adequately praise the assistance in this matter (providing comforts and hospital necessities) which the Maharaja Bahadur of Balrampur has

*rendered by placing Rs. 5,000 at my disposal every month since the war began. Since 1914 he has handed me close upon 2 lakhs of rupees for war charities.*

SIR JAMES MESTON, on 17th Dec. 16.

The Hon'ble Maharaja Sir Bhagwati Prasad Singh Bahadur, K.C.I.E., K.B.E., of Balrampur is the premier nobleman of Oudh whose estates comprise more than a thousand villages covering an area of about 1,300 sq. miles. The Balrampur family belongs to the Janwar clan of Rajputs, a clan noted for its bravery in the battlefield, truth in every-day business and feeling of love for humanity without distinction of caste, creed or colour, virtues which the present Maharaja inherits from his forbears in an ample degree. In the words of Sir Antony (now Lord) MacDonnell, some time Lieutenant Governor of the United Provinces of Agra and Oudh: "Your house has bred many soldiers, the remembrance of Raja Nawal Singh is still fresh in local tradition, while his constant warfare with the Nawabs of Lucknow is still a theme of popular song." The Balrampur house is traditionally loyal to the British Government. The present Maharaja's adoptive father Sir Digbijaya Singh was only 18 years of age when Oudh was ablaze with Mutiny, when most of the neighbouring chiefs and chieftains had risen in revolt and the

newly-established British Government was in a most perilous state. The Maharaja not minding the serious threats of his brother chieftains came to the assistance of the British Government with all his might and from beginning to end he never swerved in his allegiance to that power. Mr. (afterwards Sir Charles) Wingfield, the Commissioner of the Bahraich Division at the time, and a party of 30 other Europeans, civil and military, found shelter at Balrampur from the mutineers of Gonda and when, after a few days, they were to leave Balrampur an escort of 500 retainers was furnished to them and, what is much more, Maharaja Sir Digbijaya Singh himself was in command of this escort. Sir Charles Wingfield's note endorsed by others of his party quoted in the beginning of this chapter fully bears out this statement. In the Trans-Gogra campaign again which concluded the Mutiny in Oudh Raja Digbijaya Singh joined the advancing force under General Sir Hope Grant in December, 1858, rendering most valuable assistance in procuring supplies and accurate information of the movements of rebels and remaining with it almost continuously till the last embers of the rebellion had died out ; Sir Auckland Colvin, a previous Lieutenant Governor of the provinces, said in a speech : " I know how eminent his (Sir Digbijaya Singh's) services were in 1857 when

the events of that year overtook us and when for a moment the power of the British Government in the provinces suffered eclipse, the Maharaja with a sagacity which all tell me pre-eminently distinguished him, never for a moment hesitated as to the course he should pursue. From first to last he threw in his lot with the English Government and that at a time when he was almost the only man of possession in Oudh who dared to do so and when he was surrounded by a population in open arms against Her Majesty." The British Government was not slow in appreciating and rewarding these eminent services. A *khillat* (handsome gift of robes and cash) was bestowed upon the Raja, the whole of the confiscated parganas (districts) of Tulsipur and Ikauna, Charda and Bhinga were restored to him. He was made a Maharaja and a Knight Commander of the Most Exalted Order of the Star of India and what was indeed a unique and unprecedented distinction, the honour of a salute of 9 guns was conferred upon him, which was continued till the lifetime of the Maharani.

Maharaja Sir Bhagwati Prasad Singh Bahadur, the present chief, succeeded to his estate in 1893 and is well-known all over the country for his lavish gifts and donations to all movements calculated to advance the cause of humanity and his own province of Oudh has special reasons to be grateful

to him for his munificent donations to the causes of education and health in particular and general progress in general. His title of Maharaja was made hereditary in 1909, in announcing which Sir John Hewett said: "I believe that you are the first Talukdar of Oudh to receive this distinction. I know that it is highly appreciated by your fellow Talukdars and, I believe, by all residents of Oudh, whether Hindus or Mahomedans; and on behalf of the European community I beg to assure you that they unite in the universal approval with which the announcement of the honour has been received."

When the European war broke out in 1914 and it was realised that India's help in men, in money and in materials was indispensably needed, the Maharaja of Balrampur following the noble traditions of his illustrious house wrote unasked to H. H. the Lieutenant Governor a letter from which the following is quoted:—

"For some time past I have been thinking how best I can render some small humble service in the great European War now going on: .....In an emergency all the resources of my estate are at the disposal of the Government. I very much regret that my armed sepoys have not been so trained as to be able to fight side by side with regular troops. After consideration I have come to the conclusion that it

would be a good thing if some provision is made to alleviate the distress and gloom of our sick and wounded soldiers, British and Indian. In order to provide some small comforts, some little luxuries for our sick and wounded soldiers and sailors I shall be most happy to contribute a small sum, per month, of, say, Rs. 5,000 for the duration of the war to be spent in any way that the responsible authorities in England and India think best."

The Lieutenant Governor accepted this offer which he characterised as "kind," "patriotic" and "worthy of the high traditions of your house" and distributed the grant as follows: Rs. 1,000 a month to the organisation which provided comforts for the men and officers of the navy on active service and the remaining Rs. 4,000 to be utilised, under the auspices of St. John Ambulance Association, in providing comforts and luxuries to the hospitals established for Indian troops in Europe.

On 31st July, 1916, His Honour Sir James Meston wrote to the Maharaja: "Please accept my acknowledgments and my warm thanks for your monthly cheque for Rs. 5,000, which I have duly received. Being the 20th of your monthly contributions this marks the total donation of one lakh of rupees which you have made in this way, apart from your other acts of generosity. The help which it has been possible to give to the fighting forces by means of your donation



has been very great indeed and I hope that it will soon be possible to have an opportunity of publishing in detail the wide and varied nature of the comforts which your money has provided." The Treasurer of the East Indies Station Naval Fund acknowledged the valuable assistance of the Maharaja in every annual report of the Fund. For instance in the Report of 1915 it is said: "We have been extremely fortunate in gaining the sympathy of Maharaja of Balrampur who promised a monthly contribution of Rs. 1,000 during the duration of the war and who has already remitted fourteen such instalments....."

A full list of the Maharaja's donations and gifts is given later which will show that his contributions have been most lavish and, as Sir James Meston put it in connection with another gift of the Maharaja, go "a long way beyond anything that I had thought of asking."

The Maharaja was lavish not only in his money contributions, but was also all activity in the furnishing of combatants and non-combatants for the army. He encouraged his tenants to join the Indian army or to go to the field as labourers by announcing several concessions and by personal appeals in writing and speeches and by deputing responsible officials of his Raj to explain to them the advantages of enlistment and thus induce them to go to the field to fight the battles of their King-Emperor. A speech delivered by

the Maharaja for this object is reproduced elsewhere. Oudh is unfortunately one of those provinces from which the traditional martial spirit of the people has all but disappeared, but in spite of this drawback the Maharaja was able to raise and send to the war no less than 986 combatants and 529 non-combatants spending as much as Rs. 40,000 in the recruiting campaign alone.

In June, 1918, Captain Murray visited Balrampur on his recruiting campaign, the Maharaja presided over a public meeting convened to hear the visitor and in his opening remarks said :—

“Gentlemen,—Captain Murray is here to-day and you perhaps know the object of our meeting. What I have to say is that in the past my revered father the late Maharaja Sir Digbijaya Singh Bahadur stood firm in his duty to the Government and rendered service with your help in the troublous time of the Indian mutiny and the result of those services has been what you see to-day. The Balrampur Raj is, to-day, the premier estate in Oudh in all respects. I appeal to you earnestly, my good people, that you will all come forward and extend your helping hand to enable me to render service to our benign Government something like, if not greater than, what my father was able to render in the days gone by.

“There must be present here in this meeting many worthy sons and heirs of those who willingly shed their

blood and sacrificed their lives in serving my father to help the Government in the hour of need. They all know and remember how amply their sacrifices and services were rewarded and how peacefully and undisturbed they have been enjoying their rights and concessions.

"I may assure you, Gentlemen, that your help and services on the present occasion will not be forgotten. The urgent need at present is that of fighting men as Captain Murray will just explain to you in detail. Other provinces have gone far ahead of the United Provinces and let us now make whole-hearted efforts so as to enable Gonda to beat the other districts of Oudh in the number of recruits."

The Maharaja did not confine his war activities within the borders of his own estate. He was able to assist and advise the Government in their war activities throughout the province. What provincial meeting was there, what Darbar was there, to which the Maharaja was not invited to influence the audience by his examples as well as by his precepts? In the Provincial War Conference held at Lucknow on 4th May, 1918, in response to the gracious message of the King-Emperor himself for further help in view of the collapse of Russia and a possible invasion of India by the enemy, the Maharaja spoke as follows:—

"Gentlemen, You have listened to the comprehensive and instructive speech of H. H. the Lieutenant

Governor. I do not think there is any necessity for me to say anything after that. His Honour has said that he loves the Province of Oudh as few others do, and it is due to this personal love that he is as anxious to keep the honour of the province as any person of Oudh itself. His Honour has remarked that so far the Province of Oudh has not been able to furnish an adequate number of recruits for the army. I know that the Talukdars and other gentlemen of Oudh are making earnest efforts to furnish recruits and I realise also the difficulties under which they are labouring, but I am confident if these endeavours are continued with somewhat greater zeal, our province will be able to supply a satisfactory number of combatants and labourers.

"As for war loan I am sure our province will not cut a sorry figure. As the security is the most reliable that could be had and interest is liberal I feel no doubt whatever that everybody who can spare money irrespective of the amount will come forward to invest the same in the war loan without any further prevarication or delay.

"Gentlemen, we all know that the British in company with the Allies are fighting this war in the cause of truth, liberty and justice and taking into consideration the almost illimitable resources of our Government we should have not a shadow of doubt that the ultimate victory is ours."

The Maharaja of Balrampur himself invested Rs. 67,700 in the 1916 loan, Rs. 4,80,000 in the 1917 and Rs. 2,00 9,900 in the 1918 war loan, and his tenants, among whom he popularised the loans by distributing broadcast large numbers of war loan pamphlets, were able to invest Rs. 2,58,075 in the various loans.

As for materials, the Maharaja was equally generous. From his own *Toshakhana* (jewellery and robes department) he gave articles of the value of Rs. 15,000. He supplied two motor cars and undertook to pay the running expenses thereof also which aggregated Rs. 33,000.

The following letters of acknowledgment speak for themselves :—

Colonel S. T. Rennie, Senior Medical Officer, Calcutta, wrote to the Maharaja on 18th July, 1916 :—

"I am writing to let you know how much your kind gift of an antiseptic dressing table, received through Lady Meston, is appreciated in this hospital. We find it of the greatest use as it facilitates the dressing of the surgical cases and is most convenient in every respect."

The President of the Bureau de Secours Aux Prisonniers de guerre, British Section, British Legation, Berne, wrote to the Maharaja on 15th July, 1917 :—

"I am writing to thank your Highness for the handsome contribution you have so generously given for the benefit of our prisoners of war. I need hardly tell your Highness how deeply touched we are by your

kind thought and action and how much we appreciate this help towards our Fund. By such generosity as yours we were enabled to continue sending bread to our prisoners of war in German countries and so save them practically from starvation. I beg your Highness to accept from my committee and myself our most grateful thanks."

Below is given a list of the Maharaja's gifts and donations and of the amounts of money he invested in the various war loans.

#### WAR SUBSCRIPTIONS BY ESTATE.

	Rs.	a.	p.
(a) Imperial War relief ... ..	6,500	0	0
(b) Belgium relief ... ..	1,000	0	0
(c) Indian War relief ... ..	11,000	0	0
(d) Special War relief ... ..	369	0	0
(e) Monthly contributions @ Rs. 5,000 a month	2,30,000	0	0
(f) Contribution to War funds ... ..	10,000	0	0
(g) Special War fund, Bahraich ... ..	500	0	0
(h) Prisoners of War fund ... ..	2,000	0	0
(i) Our dly subscriptions ... ..	6,500	0	0
(j) Prince of Wales' Relief fund ... ..	1,000	0	0
(k) Isota Car to Special War fund ... ..	12,000	0	0
(l) Austain Daimler Car for sick and wounded soldiers ... ..	10,500	0	0
(m) Running expenses of Austain Daimler Car for 2 years ... ..	10,000	0	0
(n) Rare articles from Toshakhana ... ..	1,5000	0	0
<b>Total</b> ... ..	<b>3,16,869</b>	<b>0</b>	<b>0</b>

## WAR SUBSCRIPTIONS THROUGH ESTATE THEKEDARS.

			Rs.	s.	p.
(a) Imperial War loan	...	...	85,000	0	0
(b) War Leagues	...	...	8,406	0	0
(c) Recruiting	...	...	40,194	6	0
Total			73,600	6	0
Grand Total			8,94,900	6	0

## WAR LOANS BY ESTATE.

(a) Terminable Loan	...	...	67,700	0	0
(b) Imperial War Loan	...	...	4,80,000	0	0
(c) 2nd War Loan	...	...	20,09,900	0	0
(d) Cash certificates	...	...	5,813	8	0
Total			25,63,412	8	0

## WAR LOAN THROUGH ESTATE THEKEDARS.

(a) 1st War loan and cash certificates	...	2,80,800	0	0
(b) 2nd do. do.	...	27,185	0	0
	Total	...	2,58,075	0 0
	Grand Total	...	28,21,487	8 0

These figures tell their own eloquent tale. Comparisons are always odious, but if in a single case comparison is allowed it can be said without any fear of contradiction that the Maharaja's services have been not only most munificent in the United Provinces but such as might make many a bigger potentate blush.

The Maharaja was, throughout the war, most loyally and faithfully advised and assisted in his activities described above by his Private Secretary, Pandit Kanhaiya Lal Misra, B.A., an old and tried official of the Raj.

*The contributions of the Hon'ble Raja Sir Tassadduq Rasool Khan, K.C.I.C., &c., of Jehangirabad, Oudh, comprise —*

Recruits for the army	...	...	85
Various donations	...	Rs.	82,559
War Loan investments	...	„	2,50,000
War Loan investment by the tenants of the estate	...	„	28,460
Rent of a Kothi for the Red Cross Fund for the duration of the war, Rs. 2,160 a year	...	„	10,000

*The contributions of Raja Indrajit Pratap Bahadur Sahi of Tamkahi, district Gorakhpur, U. P., comprise :—*

Investment in the War loans	Rs.	87,633
Various donations	„	18,112
For supply of Bhusa worth over	„	1,000
Combatants for the army	...	51
Non-combatants	...	87





## CHAPTER VIII.

---

### Maharajadhiraj of Burdwan.

Maharaja Sir Bijay Chand Mehtab Bahadur, K.C.I.E., etc., of Burdwan is the owner of a very large estate in Bengal covering an area of 4,500 sq. miles. He is an educated gentleman, a poet and a prose-writer of some repute. On 1st January, 1909, he was admitted into the third class of the Indian Order of Merit, Civil Division, in recognition of his gallant conduct, two months earlier, in interposing his person between a would-be assassin and Sir Andrew Fraser, the then Lieutenant Governor of Bengal.

During the late European War the Maharajadhiraja Bahadur most readily and whole-heartedly responded to the calls of the Government and the people to help the successful prosecution of the same. He was the organiser and promoter of several movements which helped the Government materially either with manpower or money. He was the President of the Bengal Ambulance Corps which creditably discharged its own share of duties, as also of the Bengalee Regiment and the Bengal Light Horse, and it was largely through his untiring exertions and great personal influence that these bodies achieved the popularity they did.



HON'BLE THE MAHARAJA-DHIRAJ OF BURDWAN



His money contributions have been as munificent as they have been multifarious. He made monthly contributions to the following funds :—

*The Imperial Indian Relief Fund.*

Rs. 1,500 from January, 1915 to April, 1918,  
and Rs. 2,000 from May, 1918, till the termination of the war.

*The Bengalee Regiment Fund.*

Rs. 100 from April 1917 till the termination of the war.

*The Y. M. C. A. Hut Works fund.*

Rs. 100 from April, 1917 till the close of the war.

Besides these he paid, during the war period, a total donation of Rs. 1,70,735 to the various war funds from time to time. A list of donations of Rs. 500 and upwards is given below :—

*Contributions to the various War Funds.*

	Rs.	s.	p.
The Imperial Indian Relief Fund ... ..	15,000	0	0
H. R. H. The Prince of Wales' Fund ... ..	1,500	0	0
The Indian Soldiers' Fund, London ... ..	3,500	0	0
The Bengal Volunteer Ambulance Corps Fund ... ..	20,000	0	0
The Calcutta War Gift Fund ... ..	1,111	0	0
Donation to the Lady Carmichael Women's War Fund for a unit of ten beds ... ..	500	0	0
Donation to the Lady Carmichael Women's War Fund for soap, etc. ... ..	500	0	0
Donation towards the construction of a Y. M. C. A. Hut ... ..	1,500	0	0
Donation towards the construction of a Memorial "Chhatra" at Brighton, (£100) ... ..	1,488	6	0

	Rs. a. p.
Donation to the funds of the Bengal Double Company, Calcutta ... ..	500 0 0
Second instalment to the same ... ..	590 0 0
Lord Kitchener Memorial Fund (through H. H. the Maharaj-Rana of Dholpur) ... ..	500 0 0
The Imperial Indian Relief Fund (Central Branch) in the names of the Maharajadhiraja Bahadur, the Maharani Adhirani, the Maharajadhiraja-Kumar and the two Maharaj-Kumaris at Rs. 1,500 per mensem from January, 1915 to November, 1916 (28 months) ... ..	24,500 0 0
Miscellaneous contributions and aids to charity performances, etc., relating to the War ... ..	809 8 0
Special Donation to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund given through H. E. the Viceroy ... ..	10,000 0 0
Donation to the Fund of the Bengalee Double Company (3rd time) ... ..	550 0 0
Monthly subscription to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund for December, 1916 and January 1917 ..	3,000 0 0
Donation to the Lady Carmichael Bengal Women's War Fund ... ..	1,000 0 0
Monthly subscription to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund for February, 1917 ... ..	1,500 0 0
Monthly subscription to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund from March 1917 to April, 1918 (14 months at Rs. 1,500 per month) ... ..	21,000 0 0
Monthly subscription to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund from May, 1918 to October, 1918 (6 months at Rs. 2,000 per month) ... ..	12,000 0 0
Monthly subscription to the Y. M. C. A. Hut work from April, 1917 to October, 1918 (19 months at Rs. 100 per month) ... ..	1,900 0 0
Monthly subscription to the Bengalee Regiment Fund from April, 1917 to October, 1918 (29 months at Rs. 100 per month) ... ..	1,900 0 0

	Rs.	a.	p.
Contribution to the " Our Day " Fund (Bengal Branch) on behalf of the Maharajadhiraja Bahadur... ..	3,500	0	0
Ditto on behalf of the Maharani Adhirani ...	1,500	0	0
Lady Willingdon's Queen Mary Technical School for disabled English soldiers, Bombay ...	1,000	0	0
Donation to the new recruiting propaganda for the Bengalee Regiment ... ..	1,000	0	0
Paid for the Gifts sale (Red Cross Sale in aid of Lady Carmichael's Bengal Women's War Fund in Government House, Calcutta, on 12th March, 1917) ... ..	1,000	0	0
Donation to the " Burdwan Our Day " Fund ...	500	0	0
Donation to the King George's Fund for Sailors through Mr. W. R. Gourlay ... ..	500	4	0
Donation to the Royal Silver Wedding Fund on behalf of the Maharani Adhirani ... ..	1,500	0	0
Donation to the Charger Fund of the Bengal Light Horse for purchasing 8 horses ... ..	3,200	0	0
Monthly subscription to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund from November, 1918 to April, 1919 (6 months at Rs. 2,000 per mensem) ... ..	12,000	0	0
Monthly subscription to the Y. M. C. A. Hut Fund from November, 1918 to April, 1919 (6 months at Rs. 100 per mensem) ... ..	600	0	0
Monthly subscription to the Bengalee Regiment Fund from November, 1918 to April, 1919 (6 months at Rs. 100 per mensem) ... ..	600	0	0



## CHAPTER IX

### Maharaja Bahadur of Darbhanga.

Maharaja Sir Rameshwar Singh Bahadur of Darbhanga, in Behar, is one of the most influential landholders in India. His activities during the war were as varied as they were fruit-bearing. The following statement illustrates how lavishly the Maharaja Bahadur spent his money in helping the Empire in winning the war :—

1. The Raj sanctioned a gift of Rs. 50 and a remission of rear rent up to a limit of Rs. 25 and of current demand up to a limit of Rs. 10 to each combatant overseas, provided he was a Raj tenant.

2. Above 100 Raj tenants joined as labourers.

3. The Raj paid at the rate of Rs. 500 each to all officers who went from the Darbhanga district and joined military service. On this account a sum of Rs. 7,500 was paid as noted below :—

Mr. Maxwell as help to go to the front through				
Captain Lamb, Adjutant of the Bihar Light				Rs. a.
Horse, Mozaffarpur	...	...	..	500 0
Lt J. E. Brown	do.	do.	...	500 0
Lt. J. F. Follitt	do.	do.	...	500 0
Lt. E. W. Wyld	do	do.	...	500 0
Lt. H. M. Hanby	do.	do	...	500 0
Mr. G. M. Smith through Manager, Saraya Concern				500 0
Mr. P. T. Onrait through Adjutant, Bihar Light				
Horse, Mozaffarpur	...	...	...	500 0
Mr. B. Dalrymple Hay through Officer Command.				
ing Mozaffarpur			...	500 0

	Rs.	a.
Mr. E. M. Nicholls through Officer Commanding Mozaffarpur ... ..	500	0
Mr. W. Davis do. do. ...	500	0
Mr. P. E. Kewles do. do. ...	500	0
(Private) Clair Smith do. do. ...	500	0
Lt N. L. Harvey I. A., R. O. do. ...	500	0
(Private) H. Dalrymple Hay do. ...	500	0
Mr. N. N. Banerjee, G. B., V.C., Warrant Officer, 6th Draught Bullock Corps, Bangalore, through the Assistant Director of Supplies and Transport, 9th Division ... ..	500	0
Total ...	7,500	0

4. The Raj purchased War bonds, &c., as under :—

Indian War Bonds 5½% ... ..	27,69,900	0
British War Bonds and War loan 5 % through Mr. Coutts and Co. ... ..	4,37,308	5
War Loan 5 % ... ..	8,100	0
Treasury Bills ... ..	5,20,000	0
Total ...	37,80,308	5

5. The Raj paid towards "Our Day" and St. John Ambulance Fund, &c., as follows :—

1. Lady Florence Butler donation towards St. John Ambulance Association through Alliance Bank, Simla ... ..	2,000	0
2. Secretary, St. John Ambulance Special War Fund, through Bank of Bengal, Calcutta ...	7,500	0
3. Do. do. through Collector of Durbhanga ... ..	50,000	0
4. Secretary, War Relief Fund, through Bank of Bengal, Calcutta ... ..	1,00,000	0
5. For purchase of Aeroplanes through Collector of Durbhanga ... ..	2,00,000	0
6. Managing editor, "Behari." Subscription to- wards Belgian Refugees fund ... ..	300	0



7. Lady Carmichael Fund through Lady Sanderson, Honorary Secretary, Lady Carmichael's Bengal Women's War Fund	...	...	Rs.	a.
			600	0
8. Wellington's War Fund through Bank of Bombay	...	...	1,500	0
9. Commissioner of Ranchi War Relief Fund	...		500	0
10. Kitchener Memorial Fund, through Manager Alliance Bank, Simla	...	...	1,000	0
11. Collector of Purneah War Fund Fancy Bazar	...		1,000	0
12. W. R. Gourlay Esq. War Pageants Fund	...		500	0
13. The Hon'ble Mr. E. A. A. Hammond for food for prisoners	...	...	200	0
14. J. C. B. Drake Esquire, Patna " Our Day " Fund	...	...	5,000	0
15. The Hon'ble, Sir Edward Chamier, Kt., Patna subscription to the Red Cross fund...	...		1,800	0
16. Honorary Secretary Lady Carmichael's Bengal Women's War Fund donation	...		100	0
17. Mrs. Johnston, Darjeeling Subscription towards Soldiers' War Fund	..	...	900	0
Total	...		3,72,900	0

6. The Raj servants and tenants subscribed to war loans about Rs. 3,00,000 and to " Our Day " and St. John Ambulance Fund about Rs. 1,100.

For armistice celebration the Raj contributed as under :—

1. Patna	...	...	1,000	0
2. Mozaffarpur	...	...	1,000	0
3. Durbhanga	...	...	1,000	0
4. Madhubani	...	...	500	0

and Rs. 500 for illumination of the palace and other Raj buildings at Durbhanga.

## CHAPTER X.

### Sir Dorab Tata and the Tata Industrial concerns.

*Because we are so far removed from the seat of war, it does not come home to us so readily that they (the Central Powers) are our enemies too and not England's alone ; but it seems to me that if you look minutely into the motives that have brought on this calamity, perhaps you may find that this war, whose distant echoes even are full of inhuman terrors, and untold sufferings, is one that has one of its ultimate objects the spoliation of India. Germany in his greed has cast her baleful eye upon this, the fairest gem in the Diadem of the British Empire, and one of her principal aims, for which she has been preparing for years, in letting loose her terrific armament in this inequitable inroad upon peaceful nations, has been to carve out a road that would leave India at her mercy. What that mercy might have been you can gather from the present condition of the people of Belgium, Poland, Serbia and Northern France.*

• SIR DORAB TATA (March 5, 1917.)

*In fact, it has been said by some, not on this side of the country, that the war has been the breath of life to the Tata Iron and Steel Company. But this*

*is only partially true. The war, no doubt, stopped imports of steel into this country and has thrown the Government of India solely into the arms of the Company for its supply of rails. But your Company has not taken advantage of the situation; and as it did last year, it has again this year, accepted from the State lower prices than those ruling in the market. On the other hand, the war brought with it many difficulties and many problems for us.*

IBID (18th Oct., 1917).

*I can hardly imagine what we should have done during the four years of this war if the Tata Iron and Steel Company had not been able to give us steel rails which have been provided for us not only for Mesopotamia, but for Egypt, Palestine and East Africa.*

H. E. LORD CHELMSFORD.

Sir Dorabji Jamshedji Tata is an illustrious son of an illustrious father, the late Jamshedji Nusserwanji Tata who is admitted, on all hands, to have been the boldest and the most enterprising capitalist and Industrialist of his day in India. Sir Dorab has not only maintained the numerous industrial concerns established by his father in a prosperous condition and added considerably to their number and reputation, but has brought into fruition important schemes conceived and initiated by him. The Tatas are connected chiefly with the following concerns all

of which have proved of material assistance to the Government in the successful prosecution of the war :—

1. The Tata Iron and Steel Company, Ltd.
2. The Tata Hydro-Electric Power Supply Co., Ltd.
3. The Indian Cement Co., Ltd.
4. The Tata Oil Mills Co., Ltd.
5. The Tata Industrial Bank, Ltd.
6. The Indian Hotels Co., Ltd.
7. The Bombay United Building Co., Ltd.
8. The Textile Mills under the agency of Messrs. Tata and Sons, Ltd.
9. The Andhra Valley Power Supply Company, Ltd.

The Tata Iron and Steel Company, Ltd., is by far the most important of these concerns and Sir D. J. Tata is himself the chairman thereof. The works are only 6 years old for the first rail was rolled in 1912. It was at an infant age and amid difficult times that they were called upon to perform what has been rightly called "a national task." They were required to produce articles coming up to British specifications; and it is superfluous to say they proved quite equal to the task inasmuch as not a ton of shell steel made there was rejected for failing to come up to the standards laid down. From the beginning of the war, the Steel Company supplied to

the Government several hundred thousand tons of steel rails and structural material at controlled rates which were about a third and in some cases and at some times even a quarter of the market quotations. They converted most of their pig iron into steel with a view to meet this demand although they could have earned relatively far higher prices for this pig iron in the market. Had these pioneer iron and steel works been not in existence, the supply of these materials to Government for war purposes would have had to be obtained from abroad, possibly from the United States as the workshops in the United Kingdom were all engaged in turning out munitions for urgent needs. Supposing these materials could have been obtained from America, the price which the Government would have had to pay, even at controlled rates, would have been far higher than what was accepted by the Company considering the high level of prices obtaining there and the very high freight and insurance rates. It is difficult to say exactly what amount of money the Government saved by securing such a large tonnage of steel material from the Tata Iron and Steel Company, but judging from the fact that in the year 1917-18 alone the works produced 188,000 tons of pig iron the greater part of which was converted into 124,000 tons of finished steel and of it the Government took 81 per cent. for war consumption and more later on, it is obvious

that the Government must have saved several crores of rupees in this way. This concern as well as others not only supplied their turn-out at controlled prices, but had to content themselves with tremendous sacrifices in other ways. Sir Dorab said in his speech at the general annual meeting of the Company in November, 1918 :—

“ But while we have strained every nerve to increase productions to meet large war demands and have succeeded in doing so, I regret to say that through circumstances beyond the control of the Company, its profits this year have not increased correspondingly. The causes of this apparent anomaly are not far to seek. Put briefly, the cost of production has increased far beyond what it was last year. In plain language, everything has gone up in price including some of the raw material most needed in the manufacture of iron and steel. Coal, for instance, is one of the most important of these items. And you all know what the coal situation has been. We have had innumerable difficulties in getting it. And the slack coal supplied to us and for which we paid 27% more than we did in the previous year was such that it produced inferior coke which the blast furnaces naturally consumed in larger quantities. In fact it needed 260 lbs. more coke of this quality to produce a ton of iron.

“ Another factor that has increased the cost of

production has been the increase in wages that we granted during the war. Our wages and salary bill including the charges on the establishment of a new Research Department at Sakchi went up by nearly 24% during the war.

“ Repairs and renewals were greater and more frequent this year owing to the plant being worked at the highest possible pressure to meet increased Government demands.

“ Then again we had less pig iron to sell this year at the prevailing high prices. For we had to convert more of it into steel to meet Government orders for steel products for which we are paid at controlled prices.

“ And above all, gentlemen, there has been Government control of prices. In 1916-17 Government took 75% of our out-put of steel. In 1917-18 they took 81%. This meant that we had less quantities available to sell to the public at prevailing market rates which are far higher. During the previous year we were free to dispose of in the market second class rails and rejected material. But this year the Government took even this material at controlled lower rates.”

The Tata Hydro Electric Supply Power Co., Ltd., with its 40,000 H. P. of electric energy has been supplying about 40 cotton mills and several flour mills with all their power requirements, besides giving some energy to the Bombay Electric Supply and Tramway Company.

Most of these mills were producing material of some kind or other for Government. Apart from the output manufactured by those mills for war contracts the Hydro-Electric Company conferred a great benefit on Bombay in materially helping to conserve coal and thus helped to release wagons for the transport of material of more direct importance to the war.

The Indian Cement Co., Ltd., under the agency of Messrs. Tata and Sons Co., Ltd., also supplied to Government large quantities of cement at controlled rates which must have saved the latter several lakhs of rupees.

It is well-known that the Tata Oil Company, Ltd., undertook to carbonise for Government cocoanut shells and supplied a considerable tonnage of cocoanut charcoal for the Ministry of Munitions in England. At the time the war broke out there was a German Oil Mill at Colombo which manufactured cocoanut oil for export to Germany. Although the Tata Company has no oil mill yet in operation it is about to instal large modern mills in different parts of the country, to divert the export of Indian oil-seeds and nuts from enemy countries after the war and to crush them in India. Lord Balfour of Burleigh's Committee in their report published in May, 1917, suggested that the Government of India should consider whether any practicable measures could be devised regarding the supply of oil-seeds under its control with the object of diverting



them from enemy countries after the war. It is expected that the Tata Oil Mills will materially help in that direction. It will be a great service to the country and the Empire—a result of the war.

The Tata Industrial Bank, Ltd., with a capital of Rs. 14 crores, was started only in April, 1918. This new institution, as its name implies, will, it is hoped, play an important part in the post-war industrial reconstruction of the country.

The Indian Hotels Company, Ltd. The Tajmahal Hotel which is the private property of the Tatas accommodated large numbers of officers either free or at concession rates during the period of the war and was thus of considerable assistance in the movement of troops in and out the large port of Bombay. The concessions must have amounted to a sacrifice of income to the extent of several lakhs of rupees on the part of the owners.

The Bombay United Building Company, Ltd., placed accommodation at the disposal of voluntary agencies helping in the war, such as the Bombay Presidency War and Relief Fund, St John Ambulance Association and the East Indies Station and Naval Fund at considerable sacrifice of rent.

The Textile Mills under the Agency of the firm such as the Central India Spinning and Weaving Company, Ltd. (The Empress Mills), Nagpur, the Swadeshi Mills Co., Ltd., the Ahmedabad Advance

Mills, Ltd., the Tata Mills, Ltd., The David Mills, Ltd., and the Standard Mills, Ltd., were also of considerable assistance in providing cloth for Government requirements below market rates. In the same spirit of service a part of the magnificent Bombay house of the late Sir Ratan Tata was placed at the disposal of the Lady Willingdon Army Nurses Club completely furnished and free of rent or any other charge.

The Indian Institute of Science at Bangalore endowed by the munificence of the farsighted Mr. Tata has been no less useful in the prosecution of the war. It took up a number of scientific investigations and helped Government to employ a number of Indian materials for war purposes.

The Companies controlled by the Tatas are reckoned to have subscribed about Rs. 1½ crores to the war loans and must have effected a saving to Government in the supply of munitions of war to the extent of over Rs. 6 crores.



## CHAPTER XI.

### Rani Phulkumari of Sherkot.

*The Reports for "Our Day" are now all in. The result has been most gratifying to me and it is a matter for great pride that the United Provinces stands first in India. It has been a real delight to me to find through the Province so many willing and eager helpers and for what you personally did to secure this splendid result, I offer you my heartiest thanks.*

#### LADY MESTON TO THE RANI OF SHERKOT.

---

*The meeting broke up as usual leaving me regretful that I was the only angrez (Englishman) present to witness and appreciate its loyalty and fervour.*

M. CATTEL (with reference to a war meeting  
convened by the Rani of Sherkot)

---

Rani Phulkumari of Sherkot is not a ruler of some native state but only a landholder in the Dhampur district of the United Provinces. She belongs to the family of Sisodhia Rajputs (same to which the Maharana of Udaipur in Rajputana belongs) who migrated from their original home in Rajputana during the Mahomedan period. Like the Begum of Bhopal the Rani observes *pardah* but with all that she is a very public spirited lady, very much interested in the cause of Hindu Social Reform, more

particularly in the advance of education of her own sex. Her contributions to the war are 120 recruits from her estates, Rs. 28,170 in the shape of gifts to various war funds and a lakh of rupees invested in the Indian War Loans. But these contributions, handsome though they certainly are, are nothing when compared to the loyal spirit engendered in the people of her estate and the surrounding territory through her efforts. One Mr. M. Cattel, an "angrez" (Englishman), thus wrote to the Press with reference to a meeting in the Bijnor district convened by the Rani for the purpose of raising money for the Imperial Indian War Relief Fund. He wrote :—

#### A LOYAL RANI.

"It was my unexpected privilege to be present on the 30th instant at a simple but intensely loyal meeting in the Bijnor district of the United Provinces.

Rani Phulkumari Sahiba of Sherkot Estate, desiring to help the Government in raising money for the Imperial War Fund, devised the happy plan of inviting her leading tenants to a *jalsa* to confer with her as to what all could do. Tents were pitched in a shady mangoe tope adjoining her residence at Dhampur, and arrangements made for the entertainment at which fully 500 tenants gathered in response to their landlady's invitation. At about 5 p.m. all assembled on the terrace in front of

the Estate Kutchery where the Rani Sahiba herself was present behind the *pardah*.

Pt. B. D. Joshi, manager, opened the meeting explaining in a few simple words the reasons of the war, how England had taken up arms to prevent oppression, how British rule had made India peaceful and free ; that aid was necessary, but should be voluntary and whole-hearted, and that though the Rani Sahiba had just recently subscribed Rs. 10,000 towards the War Relief, she was prepared to help their subscriptions by heading their list with Rs. 1,000.

This address and others which followed it evoked cries of applause and readiness to give. The Rani Sahiba then herself thanked her tenants for their hearty response to her invitation, and their generosity. The enthusiasm which followed her earnest words was silenced, for the seven-year old heiress who had gravely listened to proceedings and who now thanked the assembly said that she too was giving Rs. 50. It was unanimously decided that each tenant should give 2% on his yearly rental. One, a member of the fair sex, like her squire, insisted on giving 4%.

The meeting broke up as usual leaving me regretful that I was the only *angrez* present to witness and appreciate its loyalty and fervour."

The following three out of several letters of appreciation received by the Rani from time to time from high officers in connection with her war activities throw additional light on the patriotic spirit in which she engaged herself in this work.

MY DEAR RANI SARIBA, I have not yet found leisure to write and express to you in a formal manner my thanks for your most generous offer of Rs. 10,000 as a gift to the Special War Fund for these Provinces. It is wholly admirable on your part, and I hope that it will stir up patriotic enthusiasm in your district. I have written to the Chief Justice, who is President of the Executive Committee for the provinces, to tell him of your generosity, and to suggest that one of the ambulances to be bought by the fund should bear your name. Believe me with kind regards

Yours very truly,

(Sd.) JAMES MESTON.

MY DEAR MADAM. - I am sending you in a separate cover a copy of a photograph of the Ambulances which have been constructed and are being maintained out of the United Provinces Special War Fund. One of these cars has been named after you. Let me thank you for your most generous donation to the Empire and the cause of humanity.

Yours sincerely,

(Sd.) HENRY RICHARDS.

*Chief Justice and Chairman, Executive  
Committee, U. P. Special War Fund.*

MY DEAR RANI SAHEB. Please accept my most grateful acknowledgements for what you have done for the Our Day Fund.

Apart from your own very handsome donation and from the money you have paid on behalf of your tenants. I am sure the celebration at Dhampur which was, I understand, a complete success would have been very little without your countenance and assistance.

I am yours sincerely.

(Sd.) L. M. STUBBS.

## CHAPTER XII

---

### Nawab Zoolquadar Jung of Baragaon.

Nawab Zoolquadar Jung, M.A., Bar-at-Law, retired Judge of the High Court of Hyderabad (Deccan) is not only a Talukdar (a landholder) of the province of Oudh, but is a leader of public opinion in general and of Muslim opinion in particular in his province. He belongs to an ancient Muslim family of Delhi; one of his ancestors (grandfather), Mirza Abbas Beg, was, for his services to the British in the Indian Mutiny of 1857, brought to Lucknow by Sir Henry Lawrence and made a Talukdar of Oudh, an estate known as Baragaon in the Sitapur district having been conferred on him. Mirza Ghalib, the Urdu poet of world-wide reputation, was a grand uncle of the Nawab. His father Agha Mirza Beg, generally known as Nawab Sarwar-ul-Mulk was the *Peshi* or the Chief Secretary to His Highness the late Nizam of Hyderabad. His services to the Hyderabad State and to the British Government as the chief adviser of the ruler of the State are well-known and were spread over 30 years. It was through his influence that the Imperial Service Troops were established in the Nizam's Dominions. The excellent relations that always subsisted between the British Government and the late Nizam owe a great deal to



•  
NAWAB ZOOLQUADAR JUNG BAHADUR, M.A., BAR-AT-LAW.





the policy of Nawab Sarwar-ul-Mulk. In recognition of the Nawab's services to the State, the late Nizam sent his son, Nawab Zoolquadar Jung, to England for his education where he obtained his B.A. and M.A. degrees and was called to the Bar in 1899. On his return from Europe he was appointed 3rd City Magistrate in the State where, by his loyal and meritorious services he rose to the appointment of a High Court Judge in 1907 in which capacity he served till 1915. When the war broke out, the Nawab was in Hyderabad and as a high and responsible officer he took a prominent part in all the war activities in the State. Had he been in British India at the time his services as a public leader were sure to have come into prominence but in Hyderabad he could only work as a trusted adviser of the Nizam. When the Imperial Indian Relief Fund was inaugurated in 1914 by H. E. the Viceroy and an appeal was made to well-to-do citizens for the fund, Nawab Zoolquadar Jung subscribed Rs. 75,000 (£5,000) himself and persuaded his brother officers in the state to subscribe in the same liberal manner.

In November, 1914, when war was declared against the Ottoman Empire the Nawab realised the difficult situation but came to the definite conclusion at once that to help Turkey was to help Germany and to help the latter was to help the ruination of the civilisation of the world. The following is an extract from a letter

written at the time. by the Nawab to an influential brother officer of the State.

“ We are Musalmans and Musalmans we are determined to remain. We know that the Sultan of Turkey is our religious preceptor. Turkey being the seat of Khalifate it must remain under Moslem sway, that is our conviction and we will stick to this conviction as long as there is life in us. But we know also that Great Britain is the greatest Moslem Power in the world. Not only it rules over the largest number of Musalman subjects without any interference in their religious affairs but as is apparent from the perusal of numerous declarations made by her statesmen, she has always been, was up till the declaration of war against her, ready to befriend the legitimate aspirations of Turkey and to respect her integrity, to protect her interests and to do everything in her power to help the Ottoman Empire. It is the German machinations and intrigues that have led Turkey into this suicidal war and how so much we may sympathise with her, we can not but help Great Britain in the crushing of the Central Powers and their allies.”

At the commencement of the war the Nawab had offered his services to be utilised politically anywhere out of India and he is sorry that his services could not be thus utilised

He retired from the Hyderabad Service in 1915 and settled in Lucknow. Now that he was free he

could devote all his time to the war work in which, as he said once, he was most interested.

In 1917 when the first War Loan was inaugurated in India the local officers of the Government and the leaders of public opinion took advantage of his leisure and co-opted him as a member of the War Loan Propaganda Committee. He, in this capacity, not only addressed public meetings but invited informal meetings at his own residence, discussed the ways and means which were necessary or advisable to adopt with a view to popularise the War Loan. He himself subscribed Rs. 70,000 to this loan; to the previous 4½% loan he had subscribed Rs. 75,000.

In the Indian Defence Force he was equally interested. In this movement he clearly recognised the grant to India of a special right of which she had been unjustly deprived so long. As he said once, "the young men of education, the young men of good families should not fail to take advantage of this occasion, they should not mind the terms, if they are unfavourable now, they are bound to be modified in course of time." His interest was not academic merely. He got admitted in the Force his only son, Mirza Sadiq Beg who was at that time 17 years old and was reading in the Colvin Talukdars' School, Lucknow. It will interest the readers to know that the Nawab is a politician of the advanced school, viz., he is a Congressman and a Muslim Leaguer.

7  
-  
1



---

# **India's Services in the War.**

## **PART III.**

**Some Indian Administrative Problems  
and the War.**



---

100

## CHAPTER I.

### The Constitutional Reforms.

By far the most important event of the war period has been the historic declaration of the 20th August, 1917, by the British Cabinet, of the goal of British Government in India and the subsequent proposals contained in the Montagu-Chelmsford Report of the Indian Administrative Reforms. When the Minto-Morley reforms were introduced in 1910 in the Indian administration, some political leaders expressed their dissatisfaction of them in no ambiguous language and they were justified in their views by the actual results of the working of those reforms. The Hon'ble Mr. Surenbra Nath Bannerjea described the enlarged councils as "no more than glorified debating clubs", the non-official elected members having absolutely no power over the doings of the government. When the war broke out in 1914 and it was declared on every important occasion by responsible statesmen of the United Kingdom that it was being waged for the integrity and freedom of weaker nations and specially as India helped by her men and money to stem the onrush of the Huns on Flanders and France it was but natural that thoughtful Indians also desired to nationalise the government of their country. Lord Hardinge, the then Viceroy and Governor-General of India, had to send a despatch to the Home Government on the



subject, but Mr. Chamberlain was not quite equal to the task of grappling the problem with large-heartedness. His Excellency Lord Chelmsford also addressed a despatch on the same subject just after assuming the high office he now holds. But this despatch was entirely unsatisfactory as later events have shown, one reason being that the non-official India was not at all consulted on the subject. Then, 19 of the non-official members of the Indian Legislative Council came forward and submitted a memorandum and a scheme of Reforms which they regarded as the minimum for their country, to His Excellency the Viceroy in October, 1916. It is no use to mention here in detail the reforms demanded in this memorandum and scheme, suffice it to say that the late Sir William Wedderburn called the memorandum "a remarkable document breathing a spirit of reasoned loyalty to the British Empire with a hearty desire to promote an advance in the ideals of the Government all over the civilised world." This Memorandum and the Scheme of Reforms was unanimously adopted by the Indian National Congress and the All-India Moslem League in their sessions of 1916 held at Lucknow and was baptised as the Congress-League Scheme of Reforms. The scheme fell "short of responsible government as understood in the Dominions" and "the framers of the scheme deliberately avoided the full parliamentary

system as unsuitable to the present conditions of India." The Congress after passing the Reform Scheme adopted a resolution that the country must be educated with regard to that scheme and a propaganda work must be carried on with all possible earnestness from one end of the country to the other. In response to this resolution an agitation for the securing of the Congress-League Scheme of Reforms was carried on on a very large scale. The agitation met with repression from Government officials. Several local Governments adopted a positively hostile attitude towards the aspirations of the Indian people and one provincial ruler went so far as to declare that all thoughts of an early grant of self-government to India must at the time be laid aside. This fanned the flame of agitation; repression on a larger scale followed; some of the leaders were interned or externed under the Defence of India Act which was also employed to punish mercilessly the Indian Press which advocated Home Rule for India. Then came the general talk of passive resistance. All this set the authorities athinking. In the meantime the Report of the Mesopotamia Commission was published in England and Mr. Chamberlain resigned the high office of the Secretary of State for India and in his place Mr. Lloyd George's Government appointed Mr. E. S. Montagu, one of the truest friends of India, who had, only a week or ten days before, characterised

the Indian Government as "too wooden, too iron, too inelastic and too ante-diluvian" for the present requirements of the country. The current of events in India took a turn from this point. Mr. Montagu soon after taking charge of his high office announced the decision of His Majesty's Government about the future Government of India. This was the famous declaration of the 20th August, 1917, which announced that "the policy of His Majesty's Government with which the Government of India are in complete accord is that of the increasing association of Indians in every branch of the administration and the gradual development of self-governing institutions with a view to the progressive realisation of responsible government in India as an integral part of the British Empire. They have decided that substantial steps in the direction should be taken as soon as possible and that it is of the highest importance as a preliminary to considering what these steps should be that there should be a free and formal exchange of opinion between those in authority at Home and in India. His Majesty's Government have accordingly decided with His Majesty's approval that I should accept the Viceroy's invitation to proceed to India to discuss these matters with the Viceroy and the Government of India, to consider with the Viceroy the views of the local governments and to receive with him the suggestions of representative bodies and others."

" I would add that the progress in this policy can only be achieved by successive stages. The British Government and the Government of India, on whom the responsibility lies for the welfare and advancement of the Indian peoples must be judges of the time and measure of each advance and they must be guided by the co-operation received from those upon whom new opportunities of service will thus be conferred and by the extent to which it is found that confidence can be reposed in their sense of responsibility."

The Secretary of State came to India, held numerous discussions with the Government of India, the local governments and representative bodies of the country and as a result of these discussions a report was published in July, 1918, embodying the conclusions to which Mr. Montagu and Lord Chelmsford came with regard to the constitutional changes which were in their opinion desirable in the Government of India.

With regard to these recommendations there are two sets of opinion in the political circles of India. The Indian National Congress and the All-India Moslem League regard them as "unsatisfactory and disappointing" and propose a number of important modifications therein before they are presented to the Parliament in the form of a bill. This party includes in it such stalwart leaders of Indian opinion

as the Hon'ble Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya and the Raja of Mahmudabad of the United Provinces, Messrs. Hasan Imam and Mazharul Haque of Behar and Orissa, Messrs. Bipin Chandra Pal, Moti Lal Ghose and Fazlul Haque of Bengal, Messrs. Horniman, Jinnah and Tilak of Bombay, Mrs. Annie Besant and Mr. Vijayaraghavachariar of Madras, Messrs. Harkishan Lal and M. A. Ansari of the Punjab and Delhi respectively. The other party which styles itself the "Liberal" and is called by others as the "Moderate" party and which is led by such widely respected gentlemen as Sir Dinsha Wacha, Mr. Surrendra Nath Bannerjea and Mr. Srinivas Shastri welcomes the recommendations and suggests modifications here and there. In the opinion of this party the modifications suggested by it will improve the scheme, but it is not prepared to lose the scheme if these modifications are not accepted. It must also be stated that although this party is led by such veteran politicians yet its following in the country is small. The resolutions of the Indian National Congress which represents the views of the overwhelming majority of the population are mentioned below.

### **RESOLUTIONS OF THE SPECIAL CONGRESS HELD AT BOMBAY.**

II.—That this Congress reaffirms the principles of reform relating to self-government adopted in the Indian National Congress and the All-India Muslim League, held at Lucknow in December, 1916, and declares that nothing less than self-government within the Empire

can satisfy the Indian people and by enabling it to take its rightful place as a free and self-governing nation in the British Commonwealth strengthen the connection between Great Britain and India.

**III**—That this Congress declares that the people of India are fit for responsible Government and repudiates the assumption to the contrary contained in the Report on Indian Constitutional Reforms.

- (b) That this Congress entirely disagrees with the formula contained in the said Report that the provinces are the domain in which earlier steps should be taken towards the progressive realisation of responsible Government and the authority of the Government of India in essential matters must remain indisputable pending experience of the effects of the changes proposed to be introduced in the provinces, and this Congress is of opinion that a similar and simultaneous advance is indispensable both in the provinces and the Government of India.

That this Congress appreciates the earnest attempt on the part of the Right Hon'ble the Secretary of State and H. E. the Viceroy to inaugurate a system of responsible Government in India and while it recognises that some of the proposals constitute an advance on the present conditions in some directions it is of opinion that the proposals are disappointing and unsatisfactory and suggests the following modifications as absolutely necessary to constitute a substantial step towards responsible Government.

### *Government of India.*

(1) That a system of reserved and transferred subjects similar to that proposed for the provinces shall be adopted for the Central Government.

(2) That the reserved subjects shall be Foreign Affairs (excepting relations with the Colonies and Dominions) Army, Navy and relations with Indian ruling princes and subject to the Declaration of Rights in the resolution already passed, matters directly affecting peace, tranquillity and defence of the country ; all other subjects shall be transferred.

(3) The allotments required for reserved subjects should be the first charge on the revenue.

(4) The procedure for the adoption of the budget should be on the lines laid down for the provinces.

(5) All legislation shall be by bills introduced into the Legislative Assembly provided that if, in the case of reserved subjects, the Legislative Council does not pass such measures as the Government may deem necessary, the Governor-General in Council may provide for the same by regulations, such regulations to be in force for one year but not to be renewed unless 40 per cent, of the members of the Assembly present and voting are in favour of them.

(6) There shall be no Council of State, but if the Council of State is to be constituted, at least half of its total strength shall consist of elected members and that the procedure by certification shall be confined to the reserved subjects.

(7) At least half the members of Executive Councillors (if there be more than one) in charge of reserved subjects should be Indians.

(8) The number of members of the Legislative Assembly should be raised to 150 and the proportion of the elected members should be four-fifths.

(9) The President and the vice-President of the Legislative Assembly should be elected by the Assembly.

(10) The Legislative Assembly should have the power to make or modify its own rules of business and they shall not require the sanction of the Governor-General.

(11) There should be an obligation to convene meetings of the Council and the assembly at stated intervals or on a requisition of a certain proportion of members.

(12) Statutory guarantee should be given that full responsible Government should be established in the Government of India within a period not exceeding 15 years.

### *Provinces.*

#### **EXECUTIVE.**

(1) There should be no additional members of the Executive Government without portfolios.

(2) From the commencement of the first reformed Councils the principle of responsibility of the Ministers to the Legislature shall come into effect.

(3) The status and salary of the ministers shall be the same as that of the members of the Executive Council.

(4) At least half the members of Executive Councillors in charge of reserved subjects (if there be more than one) should be Indians.

(5) The budget shall be under the control of the Legislature subject to the contribution to the Government of India and, during the lifetime of the reformed councils, to the allocation of a fixed sum for the reserved subjects and should fresh taxation be necessary, it should be imposed by the provincial Government as a whole for both transferred and reserved subjects.

#### LEGISLATIVE.

(1) While holding that the people are ripe for the introduction of full provincial autonomy the Congress is yet prepared with a view to facilitating the passage of the Reforms and to prevent the same being otherwise lost in controversy, to leave the departments of Law, Police and Justice (prisons excepted) in the hands of the Executive Government in all provinces for a period of 6 years. The Executive and Judicial departments must be separated at once.

(2) The President and the vice-President should be elected by the Council.

(3) That the proposal to institute a Grand Committee shall be dropped. The Provincial Legislative Council shall legislate in respect of all matters within the jurisdiction of provincial Government including Law, Justice and Police, but when the Government is not satisfied with the decision of the Legislative Council in respect of matters relating to Law, Justice and Police it shall be open to the Government to refer the matter to the Government of India. The Government of India may refer the matter to the Indian Legislature and the ordinary procedure shall follow. But if the Grand Committees are instituted, this Congress is of opinion that no less than one-half of the strength shall be elected by the Legislative Assembly.

(4) The proportion of elected members in the Legislative Council shall be four-fifths.



(5) Whenever the Legislative Assembly, the Council of State or the Legislative Council is dissolved it shall be obligatory on the Governor General, or the Governor as the case may be, to order the necessary elections and to resumon the body dissolved within a period of three months from the date of dissolution. No dissolution of the Legislature shall take place by way of appeal to the electorate and reasons stated in writing countersigned by ministers.

### *Parliament and India Office.*

- (a) The Council of India shall be abolished and there shall be two permanent Under-Secretaries to assist the Secretary of State for India one of whom shall be Indian.
- (b) All charges in respect to the India Office establishment shall be placed on the British estimates.
- (c) No financial or administrative powers in regard to reserved subjects should be transferred to the provincial Governments until such time as they are made responsible regarding them to the electorates and until then the control of parliament and the Secretary of State should continue.
- (d) The Committee to be appointed to examine and report on the present constitution of the Council of India shall contain an adequate Indian element. The proportion of Mahomedans in the Legislative Councils and the Legislative Assembly as laid down in the Congress-League Scheme must be maintained.

The Congress is of opinion that consistently with Imperial interests the Government of this country should have complete freedom in all fiscal matters and that the question of provincial contribution to the Imperial Exchequer be referred to the Provincial Congress Committees for opinion to be placed before the next Congress at Delhi.

## RESOLUTIONS OF THE DELHI CONGRESS OF DECEMBER, 1918.

### RESOLUTION 1.

(a) That this Congress also re-affirms Resolution No. 5, relating to Self-Government passed at the Special Session of the Congress held in Bombay subject to this, that in view of the expression of opinion in the country since the sitting of the said Special Session, this Congress is of opinion that so far as the Provinces are concerned, full responsible government should be granted at once and that no part of British India should be excluded from the benefit of the proposed Constitutional Reforms.

(b) That Non-official Europeans should not be allowed to form separate electorates on the ground that they represent the Mining or Tea Industries and if they are allowed such representation they should be limited to their proportion compared to the population of the Provinces concerned.

### RESOLUTION 2.

That this Congress views with grave apprehension the attempt made in certain quarters to assign an inferior position to the Punjab in the Reform Scheme and urges that having regard to its Political, Military and Historical importance, its wealth, education, social advancement and its magnificent services during the last war, the Punjab should be placed on a basis of equality with Bengal, Madras, Bombay and the United Provinces.

### *Self-Determination.*

### RESOLUTION 3.

In view of the pronouncement of President Wilson, Mr. Lloyd George and other British Statesmen, that to ensure the future peace of the world, the principle of Self-Determination should be applied to all progressive nations.

Be it resolved :-

I. - That this Congress claims the recognition of India by the British Parliament and by the Peace Conference as one of the

progressive Nations to whom the principle of Self-Determination should be applied.

II.—That in the practical application of the principle in India the first steps should be —

(a) The removal of all hinderances to free discussion, and therefore the immediate repeal of all laws, regulations and ordinances restricting the free discussion of political questions whether in the press, private or public meetings, or otherwise, so that the legitimate aspirations and opinions of all residents in India may be fearlessly expressed; further, the abolition of the laws, regulations, and ordinances, which confer on the executive the power to arrest, detain intern, extern, or imprison any British subject in India, outside the processes of ordinary Civil or Criminal Law, and the assimilation of the law of sedition to that of England.

(b) The passing of an Act of Parliament which will establish at an early date complete responsible Government in India.

(c) When complete responsible Government shall be thus established, the final authority in all internal affairs shall be the Supreme Legislative Assembly as voicing the will of the Indian Nation.

Resolved further :—

(d) That in the reconstruction of Imperial polity, whether in matters affecting the inner relations of the nations constituting it, in questions of foreign policy or in the League of Nations, India shall be accorded the same position as the Self-Governing Dominions.



## CHAPTER II

---

### Indian Cotton Duties.

The question of Indian Cotton and Excise Duties has been one of the most irritating grievances of economic India. It was in 1894 that cotton yarns and fabrics were excluded from the list of dutiable articles of import. India strongly opposed this step at the time with the result that, a few months later, a general import duty of 5 per cent. *ad valorem* was imposed on cotton yarns and fabrics and an excise duty on all cotton yarns of 20's and above produced by mills in British India. But even this act proved to be short-lived. In 1896, the Indian Cotton Duties Act II of 1896 was passed under which the rate of duty was fixed at  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  on imported yarns and fabrics as well as on those manufactured by Indian mills. These duties, imposed as they were at the instance of the Secretary of State, created and, rightly so, in the Indian mind, the impression that the mill owners of Lancashire in particular and their countrymen in general desired to handicap the Indian cotton industry whose progress was already causing uneasiness to Lancashire interests. But these interests were continued to be protected by these duties at the detriment of the Indian Mill industry. Indians in Councils and outside them, in the Congress and conferences had, since then, been protesting

and protesting strongly against this unjust act of the British Government, but these protests produced absolutely no result.

In March, 1917, the import duty on cotton yarns and fabrics was raised from  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  to  $7\frac{1}{2}\%$ , the excise remaining at  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$ . This increase of the import tax is important politically as well as economically for it marks the break down of the detestable Cobdenite system of penalising India in the interests of Lancashire, although it has not been found possible to go the whole way and abolish the countervailing cotton excise. In his budget speech in the Indian Legislative Council in March, 1917, H. E. Lord Chelmsford truly said :—

“And is not the imposition of an extra duty on cotton goods, raising the import rate to our general tariff level, an event which, of itself, makes this budget and this session memorable? A grievance has thus been removed which has been, for a long time, a standing source of irritation.”

The increase was a war necessity. Mr. Austen Chamberlain, the then Secretary of State for India, in reply to the Lancashire deputation which waited on him to get this measure cancelled, explained the necessity in the following dignified words and India feels grateful to him for the courageous stand he took in the matter. He said :—

“To meet the charges of that contribution (£100

million) it was necessary to raise new revenue. Now we had to raise another three millions and a half of taxation. Looking around they (the Government of India) propose to raise what more they needed by this increase on the cotton. What alternative had they? Would you have had them, you who, again and again, throughout your speeches have proposed that you are keenly and anxiously solicitous for the welfare of the poor and the peasantry of India. Raise the salt duty? Then where else was this money to come from? .....I say this measure arose out of fiscal necessities and was proposed solely for fiscal necessities and would not have been proposed at all if the fiscal necessities did not require it. ....We must raise in India as elsewhere a part of our revenue by customs duties and the cotton goods must take their share of the customs revenue which has to be raised. Do not underrate the strength of Indian feeling on this question. You said, 'If indeed it was necessary to raise the customs duty why did not you also raise the excise.' Well, you have been satisfied for twenty years with the arrangements made by the late Lord Wolverhampton as afterwards modified by Lord George Hamilton. For all those 20 years the settlement which you have found satisfactory has been an open sore in India. It is 20 years ago that Lord Lansdowne used words which were quoted in the debates of those times by Sir Henry Fowler and I venture to read

them to you to-day for if they were true 30 years ago they are of tenfold greater force and truth to-day. He said: 'There has never been a moment when it was more necessary to counteract the impression that our financial policy in India is dictated by selfish considerations.' It is a gross libel to say, and I hope this is true to-day that either of the great political parties of this country will for the sake of appeasing advantage, deny to the people of India the fair play which they expect. Now, gentlemen, I say to you quite frankly that it was not a possible course, it was not practical politics, to retort upon the offer of the Government of India to contribute £100,000,000 to the cost of this war that they might do so and we would accept it but that we could not accept the proposal which they made to enable them to carry out their gift unless they imposed additional excise corresponding to the additional customs duties. That would indeed have turned this which is now the free will offering of India to the Empire in this great hour of struggle, into the fiercest subject of contention from one end of the land to the other, and I do not hesitate to say that it would have made the offer of the Government impossible. Permit me to say, gentlemen, that I know more about India than some of those who addressed the meeting and I venture to say (and I have persons around me who know I am speaking the truth) that to couple such a condition with the

acceptance of the gift from the people and Government of India would have been to make that gift impossible. Consider, gentlemen, what it is that you are asking."

Needless to say that Indians of all shades of political and economic opinions regard this step as leading to the removal of a very sore old-standing grievance of India. But as it affects the pockets of the Lancashire weavers and spinners it is almost hoping against hope that when the immediate necessity is over, these duties will be allowed to remain at their present figures, much less that the excise duty will be abolished altogether. One may feel that India's splendid help in saving England and the British Empire in the hour of grave crisis will lead to the diehard party of English manufacturers and exploiters to think of India more generously and not only as a dumping ground for their goods. Perhaps, a sense of justice and fairness may dawn upon them and lead them to give up selfishness pure and simple in the interests, not of India alone, but of the British Empire at large.





## CHAPTER III.

### Development of Industries.

The industrial policy of the Government of India, before the war, had been one of benevolent neutrality. The authorities never realised that the industrial backwardness of India was a source of weakness to the Empire. Mr. Montagu had to complain as late as 1918 "How much more India could do for us and for herself now had her industries only been developed in the past." "When India set out," Mr. Montagu added, "to make things, railway engines, trucks and even rails she found herself requiring machinery from overseas which it was impossible to get on the necessary scale."

The outbreak of the war in 1914 led to the cessation of all imports from enemy countries and a vast field was opened in India for her to start on an industrial course. But she was ill-prepared at the time to utilise the splendid opportunities thus afforded her. It cannot be said to-day that India took full advantage of these conditions but at the same time it must be admitted that some small progress has been achieved in this direction. If this advancement is due to the war the smallness of it must also be attributed to the same cause. Sir George Barnes himself admitted recently that "although the shortness of shipping and the restrictions on manufactures in the United Kingdom

and the Allied countries have enlarged the opportunities of Indian industries, these causes have also made progress more difficult. Technical experts cannot be obtained in many cases and the obstacles to the adequate supply of plant and machinery can only be partially overcome." The following statement by Sir George Barnes as to what the Government has done to foster Indian industries is of interest:—

"Government have, in the first place, taken all possible action to guard against the unnecessary import of articles which are being produced or can be manufactured in India. They carefully scrutinize all indents from Government departments and from the railways in order to obtain as much as possible from Indian sources. Applications for priority in respect of articles required from the United Kingdom by business firms in this country are similarly examined with the same object. Promising openings for manufactures in India are thus revealed and are brought to the notice of firms likely to take up the work. Existing expert knowledge has for the first time been organized and made readily available for the help of industrialists desirous of starting new ventures. With a greater or less degree of Government help or encouragement, a number of new industries have, in fact, been started, some instances of which I will now give the hon. member...Caustic soda, magnesium chloride, thymal, sandal-wood oil, copperas, zinc

chloride and refined nitre are chemicals that have now been made in India for the first time on a commercial scale. Ferro-manganese is being produced in large quantities and has even been exported. The manufacture of mica has been taken in hand by a private firm and by the East Indian Railway. The production of silicate bricks for lining furnaces has been developed so far that it is hoped that India will soon be independent of foreign imports. Great progress has been made in the output of accessories for the textile and tea industries. The building of wooden ships has received encouragement by the offer of special terms, which were explained in a communique published a month or two ago. There has been an immense increase in the output of industries which were already established before the war. Perhaps the most important example is that of Messrs. Tata Sons and Company, whose output of steel ingots is now much more than double the output in 1913. Other lesser industries show similar development, and I would instance the glass industry, to which technical assistance has been given with excellent results in several cases, and the coir industry has been rescued from severe loss, if not extinction, by war orders. The extent to which Indian industry has been able to meet the requirements of the army for clothing and equipment has been very striking. In the current year, 30 million yards of khaki drill and of grey and bleached cloth have been

purchased in India, as against 610,000 yards before the war and 49 million yards of webbing and tapes, mainly the product of small artisans, have been purchased. Before the war the bulk of the army requirements under this head were imported. Thus only 32,000 yards of flannel and 16,000 yards of grey-cloth of Indian manufacture were obtained in India in the year 1913-14. The purchases this year amount to 850,000 yards of flannel and 650,000 yards of grey coat cloth. Six thousand workers are employed in making blankets. Two million pairs of boots are now being manufactured in a year, or more than 20 times the pre-war figure."

Now let us examine the figures of some industries. The jute mill industry was the most fortunate. There were, in 1917-18, 76 mills at work with 41,000 looms and 834,000 spindles which gave employment to 266,000 hands. While the average value of jute exports before the war was 20 crores it was 43 crores in 1917-18. The total shipment of tanned hides was double the pre-war average. The best class of hides from Northern India which were exported to Germany and Austria before the war are now being sent to Southern India tanneries. The Indian cotton industry increased its production by 46 per cent. as compared with that of the pre-war period. The quantity of cotton piece-goods imported decreased from the pre-war imports of 2,600 million yards to 1,500 million yards, a decrease

of 42 per cent. The share of manufactured goods in the export trade of the year increased to 31 per cent. from nearly 24 per cent., the pre-war average. In addition to the unparalleled prosperity of Jute and Cotton Mills, the vast turn-out of the Tata Iron and Steel Works and the expansion of the tanning industry, several other industries received impetus during the war. Take the sandal-wood oil industry. Sandal-wood formerly found its way to Germany where the oil was extracted from it. The Sandal-wood Oil Factory at Bangalore which commenced work in May, 1916, now produces 5,000 pounds of oil a month, and the net profits have already amounted to over three times the original outlay. The large output of the mines near Namtu belonging to the Burma Mines Company, Limited, is another instance. The production of refined silver has risen from *nil* to 1,525,844 ounces between 1915 and 1917 and the production of refined lead from 6,947 to 16,957 tons. These figures speak for themselves.

This is, in itself, not a bad record although it might be said that the Government took these steps more for the successful prosecution of the war than for the development of indigenous industries. If local manufactures essential for war requirements had not been developed very likely the articles required could not have been obtained from abroad.

But a definite Government policy for the

encouragement of industries has also been announced. Although it is a pity that the Indian Industrial Commission was forbidden to discuss and opine about the advisability or otherwise of the continuance, in India, of the present fiscal policy of Great Britain, which is, so to say, the peg on which the entire question of the promotion of Indian industries hangs, yet the policy laid down by the Commission is distinctly promising. It is yet to be seen how the recommendations of the Commission are finally dealt with by the Government of India and His Majesty's Government in England. The following extracts from the speech of Mr. Jehangir Bomanji Petit as President of the 14th Indian Industrial Conference held at Delhi in December, 1918, throw sufficient light on the nature of the recommendations of the Report.

“ After exhaustively dealing with the various factors that have operated against the successful industrial growth of the country, the Report comes to the perfectly correct and inevitable conclusion that a powerful and well directed stimulus is needed to start the economic development of India along the path of progress and adds that such a stimulus can only be supplied by an organised system of technical, financial and administrative assistance. In brief, the principal constructive proposals made in the Report, in the language of the Report itself, are the introduction of a system of technical education in practical relation to industrial

requirements, the supply of advice and assistance through organised scientific and technical services and the provision of more liberal finance for industries, so far as possible through private agency. The administrative machinery proposed by the Commission to put these recommendations into effect consists mainly of the creation (a) of Imperial and Provincial Departments of Industries and (b) of two new services, viz., the Imperial Industrial and the Imperial Chemical.

"The recommendations also include the provision of (c) provincial industrial and technical schools, (d) technological provincial institutes, (e) institutes for the training of mechanical engineers and (f) workshops and laboratories attached to the Offices of the Imperial and Provincial Directors.

"Also the following schemes as possible ones :—

- (1) A Central Engineering College.
- (2) A Metallurgical Institute at Sakchi.
- (3) A Central Chemical Institute.

"These proposals constitute a substantial step towards the realization of the two main principles now definitely accepted by the Government and unequivocally referred to in the Report as follows :—

(1) ' That, in future, Government must play an active part in the industrial development of the country with the aim of making India more self-contained in respect of men and material; and

(2) That it is impossible for Government to under-

take that part unless provided with adequate administrative equipment and fore-armed with reliable scientific and technical advice.'

".....Many useful suggestions and indications have been made under various heads such as the establishment of 'key industries' as a national necessity, the development of sugar, silk and saltpetre industries; the provision of technological investigations encouraging the production of hide and leather; the provision of direct financial aid by Government to industrial enterprise in the form of guarantees of dividends, loans of money, undertakings to purchase output or contributions to share capitals; the encouragement by Government of cottage industries and of co-operation in such industries; technical assistance to industries by Government including pioneer and demonstration works; the establishment of Scientific and Technical Societies on the lines of similar institutions in England; the development of Commercial Education; a more thorough compilation and publication of commercial and industrial intelligence; the prevention of the adulteration of foodstuffs and drugs; the simplification of mining leases and the publication of mining manuals; the strengthening of the geological department; and the improvement of existing waterways.

"The idea of having an Imperial Department of Stores under a Controller General in India made in the Report, has much to commend it.....The report also takes a good survey of the available raw materials and



of the possibility of developing forest resources, minerals and fisheries. The importance of scientific agriculture is also recognised and its introduction advocated. The sources of power which exist in India appear also to have been carefully considered and important suggestions for their commercial utilisation and particularly hydro-electric power are made in the Report.

"The Report also recommends the appointment of a committee to consider the establishment of a school of Navigation and Marine Engineering.

"I also welcome as steps in the right direction the recommendation of the Commission about the appointment of a commercial member of the Railway Board and about the presence at the Railway Conference and at meetings of the Goods Classification Committees of representatives of British and Indian Commercial bodies.

The introduction of the scheme of Trade Commissioners for India and Assistant Indian Trade Commissioners is good and I welcome it."

The report bristles with serious omissions also which it is needless to mention here. The recommendations, if and when given effect to, will no doubt get India on the path of industrial progress and we shall be thankful for all this to one cause, viz. the European War.

All said and done, the fact is undisputed that much valuable time was lost in coming even to these conclusions. Had the steps recommended in the Report been taken at the commencement of the War, Japan

would not have been able to swoop down upon the Indian markets and flood the country with a variety of her merchandise ; on the other hand, India would have been able to stand on her own legs.



## CHAPTER IV.

### The Education Problem

As admitted by Mr. Montagu and Lord Chelmsford in their Report on Indian Constitutional Reforms, one of the greatest obstacles to India's political development lies not only in the lack of education among its peoples taken as a whole but also in the distribution of educational advance. Will any body outside India believe that after about 150 years of British Rule in India only 6 per cent. of the total population is literate and under 4 per cent of the total population is undergoing instruction? Then, whatever education is imparted it is on wrong lines. It is, in the language of the two statesmen mentioned above, "too purely literary", it admits "methods of unintelligent memorising and of cramming", it produces "far in excess of the actual demands of Indian conditions, a body of educated young men whose training has prepared them only for Government service or the practice of the law". "From the economic point of view", Mr. Montagu and Lord Chelmsford admit, "India has been handicapped by the want of professional and technical education; her Colleges turn out numbers of youngmen qualified for Government clerkships while the real interests require, for example, doctors and engineers in excess of the existing supply. The

charge that Government has produced a large intelligent class which cannot find employment has much substance in it. It is one of the facts that lie at the root of recent political difficulties.....that the system has failed to train Indians for practical work in manufactures, commerce and the application of science to industrial life".

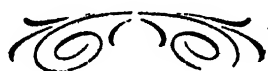
Even this recognition of the defects of the present educational system in India by such responsible statesmen as the Viceroy and the Secretary of State for India is a great gain to this country, as prior to this, whenever educated Indians brought these defects to the notice of the powers that be, the latter did not pay any heed to them. The authors of the Report have proposed that "the direction of Indian education should be increasingly transferred to Indian hands." Similarly the Indian Industrial Commission have recommended the provision of provincial Industrial and Technical Schools, technological provincial institutes for the training of mechanical engineers and workshops and laboratories attached to the offices of the Imperial and Provincial Directors of Industries. The Commission suggest, as possible measures, the establishment of a Central Engineering College, a Metallurgical Institute at Sakchi and a Central Chemical Institute.

These recommendations are, undoubtedly, steps in advance for the solution of the Indian educational

problem although there are critics also whose number is not small who think that these steps do not go far enough. But, even as they are, they are only recommendations which are yet to be given effect to. In the meantime, signs are not lacking that the impetus which the war has given to the right solution of the educational problem of the world has brought about a wholesome change in the angle of vision of the rulers in India. There was a time, not long distant from now, when the Government of the time laughed at the representatives of India when they pointed out the defects of the present system of education and urged for the expansion of education in all its branches, when Mr. Gokhale's modest bill on compulsory and free primary education was opposed by the Indian Government. The war has broadened the minds of the very same rulers and to-day we find that the bill introduced by the Hon'ble Mr. Patel to enable district municipalities in Bombay for the adoption of compulsory Primary education was passed by the Bombay Legislative Council with the support of the Government and has become law by the sanction of the Government of India. A bill of a similar nature but of wider application has been sanctioned for the province of Behar and Orissa. In other provinces similar bills are either awaiting introduction or have arrived at various stages in the process of legislation. In the provinces of the Punjab and Agra and Oudh the Local

Governments have issued resolutions contemplating vigorous action for the expansion of elementary education.

If the European War is responsible for this broad policy it is no less responsible for the lack of sufficient funds to give immediate effect to this policy. Now, that the war is over and normal conditions are expected to be established ere long it is hoped the educational problem of India will receive that attention from the Government which its importance deserves.



## CHAPTER V.

---

### King's Commissions in the Army.

The war is responsible for the removal of yet another long-standing grievance of India. The Indian National Congress passed the following resolution as early as 1887:—

“That in view of the loyalty of Her Majesty's Indian subjects this Congress considers it desirable that the Queen's proclamation should be given effect to; that the military service in all its grades should be practically opened to the natives of this country and that the Government should establish Military Colleges in this country whereat the natives of India, as defined by statute, may be educated and trained for a military career as officers of the Indian Army.”

Sir S.P. (now Lord) Sinha in his presidential address at the Bombay Congress, in 1915, said:—  
“Even with regard to the classes of men, Sikhs and Rajputs, Gurkhas and Pathans, etc., who are taken into the regular army for the simple reason that the number of English troops is not in itself sufficient to maintain peace and order in this country, it is an inflexible rule that though they may now obtain the English badge of valour, *viz.*, the Victoria Cross, not one of them can receive a commission in His Majesty's

Army irrespective of birth or bravery, education or efficiency.

"2".—We ask that the commissioned ranks of the Indian Army should be thrown open to all classes of His Majesty's subjects, subject to fair, reasonable and adequate physical and educational tests and that a Military College or Colleges should be established in India where proper military training can be received by those of our countrymen who will have the good fortune to receive His Majesty's Commissions."

Even H. E. Lord Chelmsford had to admit in September, 1917

".....that the question of commissions is one that dates back to what I may describe as pre-historic times and has been the subject of discussion by Government after Government."

It was in 1902 that Lord Curzon brought into existence the Imperial Cadet Corps whereby a military career was opened to a few scions of noble families in India. Lord Curzon probably hoped by the institution of this corps he had taken the first step towards solving this difficult problem, but in the words of Lord Chelmsford "years slipped by, however, and nothing was done until we took up the matter again."

When the war broke out in 1914 and India was asked to supply men in larger and larger numbers, her representatives suggested that the throwing open of the King's Commissions to His Majesty's Indian



subjects would fire the imagination and stimulate the virility of India in a way that nothing else could do.

Influenced by these earnest appeals the Government of India addressed the Secretary of State on the subject, at the end of the year, 1916, but the White-hall, being as dilatory in its official proceedings as Simla or Delhi, could not come to a decision and the country was frequently told to wait patiently for the same. On September 5th, 1917, the Viceroy announced in the Indian Legislative Council that "as a mark of approbation of their services during the war H. M. the King-Emperor has been pleased to appoint nine Indian officers to British Commissions with effect from 25th August." But even this announcement went very little way as it did not solve the problem in the right manner. Indians demanded that the King's Commissions should be thrown open to all classes of His Majesty's subjects irrespective of caste, creed or color, subject only to "fair, reasonable and adequate physical and educational tests." The announcement did not fulfil this test. Later on, in April, 1918, when the situation became very gloomy and the whole Empire was asked and expected to organise its help in men money and resources to its utmost capacity a conference, consisting of a number of ruling chiefs and other leading gentlemen, official and non-official, of India was held in Delhi under the presidentship of H. E. the Viceroy himself. This Conference, among other measures

designed to mobilise that power, effectively impressed on the Government the necessity for the grant of a substantial number of King's Commissions to Indians and urged, as a corollary to it, that measures be taken for training the recipients of these commissions. In June, 1918, a Press Communique was issued from Simla which is reproduced at the end of this chapter.

A perusal of the Communique will clearly show that whereas a grave and long-standing grievance has been removed, the concessions extended are not such as to satisfy popular expectations. So far as the men actually serving in the army are concerned, the grant of a certain number of King's Commissions to officers who have distinguished themselves in the present war and the grant of honorary commissions to officers who, by reason of age or otherwise are ineligible for the same, is quite as it should have been. The other important change involved in the decision to nominate Indian gentlemen for cadetships at the Sandhurst College is not without defects. The number of such Indians is limited annually only to ten and the system was to be in force during the war. As regards the most important change, the throwing open of commissions to all classes of people, the method prescribed and the restrictions imposed in respect of nominations are such as cannot satisfy the aspirations of the classes who are most anxious to embrace the military profession : firstly, because only a very limited

number of candidates are to be selected from civil life, secondly, these commissions are to be only temporary, and thirdly the persons chosen will be from families which have rendered good service to the Government and more especially those which have actively assisted in recruiting during the war. When a few months later the actual total number of King's commissions granted to Indians was announced it was found to be extremely disappointing. The Delhi War Conference had recommended that a substantial number of such commissions should be granted to Indians, the Government had announced in their Press communique that a certain number would be granted commissions. This 'certain number' was to be only 41 when selections were made. Of these 41, only 16 were taken from civil life in the whole of British India and Burma, 9 from Indian States and the rest from those already in the military service. This small number will look insignificant when it is remembered that many of the commissions were to be of temporary nature only.

Similarly it was announced in the Communique of June last that 10 Indian gentlemen would be nominated annually during the war for cadetships at the Royal Military College, Sandhurst. In November last, 5 nominations were made for the course which was to commence in January, 1919, and 5 were to be nominated for the course which is to commence in July, 1919.

Now that the war is over the period of the temporary commissions will soon expire. It is, however, believed that rights once granted, in howsoever special circumstances, are not likely to be revoked when those circumstances have disappeared; and it is hoped that no such backward step is to be taken.

---

*Press Communique.*

SIMLA, JUNE 21ST, 1918.

The Government of India have had under consideration, for some time past, proposals for the grant of commissions to Indians. Expression was given to their views by His Excellency the Viceroy in his speech at the War Conference at Delhi and those views were at once communicated to His Majesty's Government, but the latter's pre-occupation with other matters had delayed their reply. This reply has now been received and is to the effect that His Majesty the King-Emperor has decided to grant : (i) A certain number of substantive King's commissions in the Indian Army to selected Indian officers who have specially distinguished themselves in the present war; (ii) a certain number of King's commissions conferring honorary rank in the Indian Army to selected Indian officers who have rendered distinguished service, not necessarily during the present war, and who owing to age or lack of educational qualifications are not eligible for substantive King's commissions, such honorary commissions will carry with them, special advantages in respect of pay and pensions; (iii) a certain number of temporary but substantive King's commissions in the Indian Army to selected candidates nominated partly from civil life and partly from the Army. Those selected from civil life will be nominated by His Excellency the Viceroy on the recommendation of His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief and the local Governments and political Administrations concerned. They must be between the ages of 19 and 25 and will be nominated by His Excellency

the Viceroy on the recommendation of His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief and the general officer in whose command they are serving. In making selections preference will be shown to officers or non-commissioned officers who have displayed special aptitude as leaders and instructors. No candidate will be eligible for nomination, unless he is medically fit and has passed a qualifying examination as a test of his general education. The standard required of civil candidates will be that prescribed for the diploma of one of the colleges, a school-leaving certificate recognised by a local Government, the matriculation examination of an incorporated university or any higher examination. Holders of such certificates will be exempted from the qualifying examination referred to above. The standard of the qualifying examination demanded of military candidates will be prescribed by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief. Candidates selected for nomination for examination will be required to join a school of instruction. Their status, while under military training, will be that of cadets. The length of the course will depend upon the attainments of cadets. It will usually be not less than a year. No cadet will be granted a commission unless reported fit, in all respects, of employment as an officer on active service. On completion of the school course candidates who qualify for commissions will be posted to Indian regiments as temporary second-lieutenants and will be subject to the same regulations and enjoy the same status as British officers of the same rank. On the termination of the War temporary officers appointed under this scheme who have proved themselves efficient in every respect and who desire to make the Army a profession will be considered for permanent commissions. The remainder will be retired on gratuity with permission to wear the uniform of the rank held at the time of retirement.

2. The Government of India have also decided, with the approval of the Right Hon'ble the Secretary of State for India to nominate ten Indian gentlemen annually during the war for cadetships at the Royal Military College, Sandhurst. Candidates will be nominated by His Excellency the Viceroy on the recommendation of the Commander-in-Chief and the local Governments or political administrations concerned. No candidate will be eligible for nomination unless he is

medically fit and has passed a qualifying examination similar to that required by the admiralty in the case of the candidates for the Naval College at Osborne designed as a test of general intelligence. Candidates for nomination must be between the ages of 17½ and 20 on the 1st July, 1918. A syllabus of the qualifying examination referred to above will be published at an early date. The general standard required will be that prescribed for candidates for temporary commissions. The payment of fees for the education of cadets at Sandhurst is in abeyance during the war. Parents and guardians are required, however, to contribute £35 towards the cost of uniform, books, recreation, etc., and a pocket money allowance not exceeding £50 a year to be paid through the College authorities is also usually necessary. While at Sandhurst Indian cadets will be treated in precisely the same way as British cadets and after passing the qualifying examination on the termination of the course will, if found suitable in all respects, be granted permanent King's Commission in the Indian Army.



## CHAPTER VI.

### India's Status in the Empire.

#### *(The Imperial Conference)*

The war has raised the status of India by the recognition of her as an equal partner, in some respects, at least, in the British Empire. Before the war she was a mere dependency having absolutely no voice in problems Imperial. For the first time in the history of British India, the Secretary of State for India was nominated to represent his constituency in the Imperial Conference of the year 1917 which was designated as the Imperial War Conference. Later on, it was announced that two representatives from India were to be nominated by the Government of India to assist and advise the Secretary of State in the Conference and when these representatives were actually nominated in January, 1917, it was found that they were three instead of two, the selection of H.H. Maharaja of Bikaner to represent the Ruling Chiefs of India being perhaps an afterthought.

When the Conference actually met in April, 1917, Sir Joseph Ward, the representative of New Zealand, suggested the modification of the resolution relating to the constitution of the Imperial Conference in a way so as to include in it the representatives of India as well. He stated that those representatives were

present and their presence was due to the fact that the Conference had been called, not under the name of the Imperial Conference but under another name so as to admit of their attendance. Accordingly the following resolution was accepted by the Imperial War Conference.

“That the Imperial War Conference desire to place on record its view that the Resolution of the Imperial Conference of April 20th, 1907, should be modified to permit of India being fully represented at all future Imperial Conferences and that the necessary steps should be taken to secure the assent of the various Governments in order that the next Imperial Conference may be summoned and constituted accordingly.” The necessary assent was obtained and the resolution was published on the following day, April 16th.

The first Imperial War Conference was held, therefore, with the Indian representatives (although nominated) in it.

H.H. The Maharaja of Patiala in the Delhi Banquet to Ruling Chiefs in November, 1917, said in his speech :—

“The Conference marked, what Lord Curzon rightly called, a remarkable forward step in the constitutional evolution of the Empire. The representatives, he pointed out, were to be regarded not as members of an Imperial Conference of the old style but as members, for the time being, of the governing body of



the British Empire. The association of Indian representatives with this governing body of the British Empire marks, indeed, a new chapter in India's history. It was England's manifesto to the world that India, too, was to be given a share in the responsibility of the Imperial Government."

The Prime Minister, later on (May 17th, 1917), announced in the House of Commons that the brotherhood of England and India established on the battlefield was to abide after the war. Mr. Lloyd George said that meetings of an Imperial Cabinet should be held annually or at any intermediate time when matters of urgent Imperial concern required to be settled and that the Imperial Cabinet should consist of the Prime Minister of the United Kingdom and such of his colleagues as deal specially with Imperial affairs, of the Prime Minister of each of the Dominions or some specially accredited representatives possessed of equal authority and of a representative of the Indian people to be appointed by the Government of India.

Needless to say that India was similarly represented in the Imperial Conference in 1918 by H. H. the Maharaja of Patiala and Sir S. P. Sinha and in 1919 H. H. the Maharaja of Bikaner and Sir S. P. Sinha were nominated to represent India not only on the Imperial Conference but on the Peace Conference as well as representatives of India nominated by the Government of India.

India regards this step, as it does none other that has so far been taken, as a unique recognition of her right as a part of the great British Empire, although she considers the nomination system as a great drawback to this representation on the ground that here in this country the Government and the people are two separate entities. Exception is not taken to the representative character of the nominees that have so far been selected, save in a few quarters. What is generally objected to is the principle of appointment by nomination. But it must be remembered that India's rightful place in the Empire has been recognised and it is not too much to hope that either by the grant of Self-Government at an early date there will remain no distinction between the Government's nominee and the peoples' nominee, for in that case the Government will be the peoples' Government as in self-governing dominions or the selection will be made through the Indian Legislative Council and the Council of Indian Princes respectively.



## CHAPTER VII.

### The Arms Act.

As admitted by the Government of India itself in its resolution of the 22nd March, 1919, "for many years past the administration of the Indian Arms Act has been the subject of adverse criticism, mainly because European and East Indian subjects of His Majesty are exempted from the obligation to take out licenses for the possession of firearms while Indians, outside certain privileged classes, have to apply for licenses and even if successful in their applications, can, in most cases, obtain them only after enquiries as to their status and character". The Government might have added that such successful applications were extremely rare. It is a bare truth to say that no other measure of the British Government in India has tended to alienate the sympathies of the Indian population with the present administration than the administration of this act. An Indian, however loyal, however law abiding, however educated he may be, cannot keep arms, except under very special circumstances, to protect himself in time of danger from wild animals, dacoits and robbers while an Anglo-Indian servant of the same Indian can possess firearms without any license whatever. What a humiliation! Such an administration of the Act not only meant a positive

distinction of race between subjects and subjects of His Majesty but it implied explicitly that the Government did not trust and had no faith in the loyalty of the people, a fact which is naturally resented by the latter. The Indian National Congress has been demanding the total repeal of this unnecessary and harmful Act or, in the alternative, its administration on a purely fiscal basis whereby any one desiring a license could secure it without question on payment of the prescribed fee. When the war was in progress the Government realised the situation. It learnt, perhaps for the first time, that the Arms Act had demartialised the whole nation and had, in consequence, affected the recruitment figures very considerably. The Delhi War Conference demanded suitable modifications in the Act and H. E. the Viceroy more than once promised that racial discrimination in this matter would soon be removed and the delays and inconveniences which necessarily attend the present system would be minimised. The long looked for decision of the authorities was announced on the 22nd March, 1919, a few months after the cessation of hostilities. Although the announcement came after the close of the war yet assuredly it is an outcome of the war. Now what are the changes announced? They are :—

- (1) All arms other than fire-arms and also fire-arms of an obsolete character possessing a purely antiquarian value will be exempted from all the

prohibitions and directions contained in the Arms Act except in Burma, the Punjab and the N.-W. Frontier Province provided that any local Government may retain the existing restrictions for particular weapons or in particular areas where such a course is necessary in the interests of law and order.

(2) All distinctions of a racial character will be abolished, but a restricted schedule of exempted persons as appended hereto will still be retained, the privilege being subject to the same restrictions in respect of the number and description of weapons as at present.

(3) The exempted persons will not be required to register their weapons, but power will be reserved to the Government of India and the local Governments and administrations to require the registration of rifles, revolvers and pistols in the possession of such persons where necessary.

(4) The great landholders included in entry (b) of the schedule appended who at present enjoy exemption in respect of weapons in the possession of their retainers will, in future, be allowed exemption in respect of a fixed number of retainers whose weapons will be registered annually as retainers' weapons, their number and description only being specified.

*Qualifications for privileges.*

(5) To persons of approved character and status licenses for the possession of rifles (other than those

of prohibited bores) and smooth bores will ordinarily be issued on application and without previous enquiries. It will be for the local Governments to prescribe for each province the qualifications entitling any person to this privilege, but subject to any such orders the Government of India consider fit to issue.

The following qualifications should be sufficient : —

(i) Membership of any order established by the Crown or the possession of title conferred or recognised by the Government of India or of the Kaiser-i-Hind medal or a certificate of honour.

(ii) Membership, past or present, of the Indian or a provincial Legislative Council or inclusion in the list of provincial darbaris.

(iii) Payment of not less than Rs. 1,000 per annum land revenue or Rs. 250 in road and public works cesses.

(iv) Payment of income-tax on an income of not less than Rs. 3,000 for a period of 3 years.

(v) Being a Government officer in receipt of not less than Rs. 200 per month.

(vi) Being a commissioned or gazetted officer of H. M.'s Military or Naval forces or H. M.'s Indian marine service or a commissioned Indian officer of the Imperial Service Troops in active service.

(vii) Being a pensioned officer who before retirement was, by virtue of his official position included in any other classes described in (v) or (vi) above.

(6) Persons who have hitherto enjoyed exemption, but are not included in the new schedule of persons exempted, will be required to take out license, but it will be open to the local Government to treat them as entitled to the privilege described in clause (5) above provided that there is no race distinction.

Certain changes are to be made in the rules regulating the issue of licenses, such as (i) license for revolver and pistols will be issued only in cases of real necessity and to persons of approved character, the fee being fixed at an enhanced rate of Rs. 10 except in the N.-W. F. Province where no change will be made. (ii) For a license in form (31) the fee will be raised to Rs. 5 for each breech-loading weapon, but will remain unchanged for muzzle-loaders. (iii) Licenses will be granted, if so desired, for an extended period of 3 years on a compounded fee, subject to the existing conditions regarding the report of loss and transfer of the weapon and subject further to the proviso that the local authorities shall have the right to enquire whether the weapon for which a license has been granted is still in the possession of the license-holder. (iv) Special instructions will be issued to afford facilities to agriculturists to obtain licenses for the protection of crops and cattle and to secure that they are not withheld without good cause. (v) Licenses other than those for the protection of crops or cattle when issued at the license-holder's place of permanent residence

will be valid throughout British India except Burma, Assam and the N.-W. F. Province subject to any restrictions that may be necessary in regard to any particular province. (vi) Licenses will not only be issued by District Magistrates but also by such sub-divisional officers as the local Government may specially empower on this behalf. For the purposes of enquiry preliminary to the issue of a license, other agencies will, where possible, be employed in addition to or in substitution for the Police.

On a careful examination it will be found that the concessions forecasted in the resolution of the Government of India, dated 22nd March, 1919, lag considerably behind the expectations of the nation. It is said that only "persons of recognised and approved status and character" can get these licenses, but the same Government which has been administering the Act at present will be the judge of the 'recognised and approved status and character', a phrase extremely elastic in interpretation. "All arms other than fire-arms" it is provided, and "also arms of an obsolete character possessing a purely antiquarian value" will be exempted. This is really no concession as such commodities can hardly serve the purposes of arms. It must, however, be thankfully admitted that it will be a boon to the agriculturists to be able to possess some arms for warding off the depredations, against their crops, of birds and beasts.



## CHAPTER VIII .

### Indian Emigration to the Colonies.

Another grievance of India for the removal (although partial, again) of which the war is to be thanked is the system of indentured emigration to the Colonies of South Africa, Fiji, Trinidad, etc. It is not necessary to state here at great length the horrible disadvantages, disgrace and dishonor which Indian emigrants had to suffer owing to this system. Indians had declared from a thousand platforms that the system was a disgrace not only to India but to all who countenanced it. Not only Indian labourers were bound hand and foot by the terms of the indenture and thus rendered utterly helpless, but it lowered the status of India as a nation in the eyes of the civilised world. Mr. C. F. Andrews who had seen things with his own eyes in Fiji and South Africa, spoke of these things as "unforgettable, intolerable sights which have burnt themselves into my mind and heart, things unspeakable in their shame and degradation." Our public men spared no pains to get the system abolished. The names of Messrs. Gandhi, Gokhale, Malaviya, Natesan, Andrews and Polak must be mentioned with great honor in this connection. Some of them went and lived in the colonies simply to help their unfortunate brethren in their troubles and difficulties. Others brought their influence to bear upon

the authorities in India and elsewhere and still others roused public opinion against it. Even our women feeling "the misery and shame of our sisters in the colonies as if they were our own", had to throw aside their customary abstention from matters outside their domestic circles and take the unprecedented step of appearing before His Excellency the Viceroy. "In the name of women of India" said they in their address to the Viceroy, "we come to you to plead the cause of the poor, helpless and ignorant women who are taken from our villages and made the victims of the indenture system in the colonies."

The Government of India also condemned the system in no unmistakable terms. In their despatch of October 15th, 1915, it was stated that this indenture system was a "system leading to much unhappiness and moral degradation among certain classes of a population dependent on His Majesty's Government's care and protection." In the same despatch the words are written (and these words had the unanimous sanction of the Government of India before being forwarded to the Secretary of State and were based on the unanimous conclusions of every Provincial Government.) "It is firmly believed also in this country, and it would appear, not without grave reason that the women emigrants are too often living a life of immorality in which their persons are, by reason of pecuniary temptation or official pressure, at the free disposition of their

fellow recruits and even of the subordinate managing staff."

From the side of the colonial employers of labour the argument used to be advanced that these emigrants under indenture system could save a good deal of money during their period of contracts and thus made India richer. The official despatch referred to above exploded this theory also.

It was the necessities of the war that led in the first instance to the stoppage of this system in 1917. A Press Communique was issued restricting on military grounds the recruitment of labour for service abroad and His Excellency the Viceroy in his speech closing the spring session of the Indian Legislative Council of 1917 remarked

"Incidentally as a consequence, recruitment for indentured labour to Fiji, Trinidad and other West India Islands has come to an end." "It is difficult to conceive" His Excellency added, "that a traffic of this sort once ended can be revived," This announcement was received by India with considerable rejoicing although it was due to the military necessity.

The question of Indian Emigration to colonies was later on taken up by the Inter-Departmental Conference on Emigration from India. This conference was wholly an official body and it made its suggestions without calling for any witness or taking any steps to ascertain the Indian point of view. It was stated in

the Report of the Conference that the new system of emigration would be entirely free and that the indenture system would be abolished. The new system would be one of aided colonisation. Although it is far too superior to the Indenture system yet the substitute has its own defects of more or less serious nature and the Indian opinion is absolutely opposed to any system of recruitment of labour for emigration to colonies. The recommendations of the committee were all directed to securing for white colonists industrious and dutiful labourers for the benefit of their estates and not in order to promote the settlement of Indians in the colonies as independent farmers or proprietors even after they have served their white masters for a reasonably long period.

What India wants is that the movement of labour and other population between India and the Crown Colonies should be unconditional. If an Australian can come down to India without any condition implying racial distinction, then an Indian should have the unconditional right to go over to Australia. If, on the other hand, the government of a particular colony should insist, in self-interest, on the imposition of certain conditions upon Indian immigration to their land, the Government of India should have the authority to retaliate on that particular colony by imposing similar conditions on the landing of their men on Indian soil. Unless this is done, India cannot be satisfied.

## CHAPTER IX.

### Elevation of Lord Sinha.

The appointment of an Indian as the Parliamentary Under Secretary for India is an event of no small importance. It was a long-standing grievance of India that the highest offices of the Government both in India and in England were closed for her sons. Under the Morley-Minto Scheme of Reforms, Indians were for the first time included in the Executive Governments of India, Central and Provincial, and incidentally Mr. (now Lord) Sinha was the first Indian to be appointed to a membership of the Executive Council of the Government of India. Born (in 1863) of a middle class family, Lord Sinha received a good education, first in India and then in England, won several prizes and scholarships at Lincoln's Inn, was finally called to the bar in 1886. In 1903 he was appointed Standing Counsel to the Government of India, and in 1907 Advocate-General of Bengal. He was the first Indian to be appointed to that post, which is somewhat similar to that of Attorney-General in England, except that the Advocate-General of Bengal is not a member of the Government of India. For about a quarter of a century Mr. Sinha occupied a prominent position at the Calcutta bar, having a very extensive and lucrative practice. In 1909 he was appointed the



*India has not fallen behind other portions of the British Empire but has stood shoulder to shoulder with them by the side of the Imperial mother in the hour of her severest trial.*

LORD SINHA OF RAIPUR.



first Indian member of the Viceroy's Executive Council. In accepting that office he was reported to have sacrificed a practice which yielded to him an annual income of about Rs. 200,000.

His position as the only Indian member of the Governor-General's Executive Council did not, however, prove to be a bed of roses. The revolutionary movement was springing fast, and though he was prepared to give his support to all reasonable measures of prevention and punishment, he was not willing to subscribe to a general policy of repression and suppression such as was favoured by his colleagues. After a year of service he resigned his office and returned to the bar.

This step made such a fine impression on his educated countrymen that in December, 1915, he was asked to preside over the annual session of the Indian National Congress held at Bombay. The speech he delivered on that occasion, though not so strong as the bulk of Indian Nationalists would have liked, was on the whole, dignified and constructive.

Shortly after, to the surprise of everybody, Mr. Sinha again accepted office, as a member of the Executive Council of Bengal, a position inferior to the one which he had previously resigned. What moved him to take this action is not known, but since that time he has been closely connected with the Government, and has evidently played an important part in the



development of the new policy which has found expression in the Montagu-Chéłmsford Scheme for the re-organization of the Government of India.

At the time of inaugurating his Indian Reform Scheme in 1909, Lord Morely laid down the policy of rallying the moderates among the Indian politicians. But he did little to put it into practice, perhaps because he was opposed by the vested interests of the Anglo-Indian bureaucracy. The war, however, brought a change. In 1917 it was decided to give representation to India in the Imperial Conference. Sir S. P. Sinha was one of the three representatives selected. In the Imperial Conference, Mr. Sinha's reasonable and moderate attitude, his high intelligence and dignified deportment won for him the estimation and respect of all his colleagues from the Overseas Dominions. Later on, as one of India's representatives he was allowed to participate in the deliberations of the Imperial War Cabinet.

In 1918 that honour was repeated. In the course of an interview granted at that time (Sept. 13th, 1918) to the Overseas Press, Mr. Sinha was reported as saying : —

‘ It was not the constitution alone that was wanted for India, but contentment and prosperity... India had not been prosperous for a long time past and was not prosperous now. It was true that the jute mills in Bengal were making huge profits but the peasantry

were little, if any, better off. The ownership of the mills was exclusively British—he might also say exclusively Scottish - and that was where the profits probably went. They certainly did not go to the ryots who had to pay war prices for food, salt, cloth, and other necessities, but did not receive correspondingly increased payments to meet those higher charges. India had been the hewer of wood and the drawer of water for the rest of the Empire. She desired and demanded a place in the Empire worthy of her glorious past, of her present resources, and of the part she had been privileged to bear in this war. With a peaceful people, fertile soil, and unlimited reserve in men and material, there was no reason why India should not be as prosperous as any other parts of the Empire. They looked to the rest of the Empire and particularly to England to find the remedy..... Literally, millions in India were on the border of starvation. Half the population never had a full meal in the day, and means must be found to remedy this state of things. It was essentially necessary to take steps with regard to the constitution as a means of bringing about contentment and prosperity. What was wanted was democratic government, and there was no reason why it should not work equally as well in India as in any other country. The object of the war was that every people should have the same chance and right of self-development.'

On the cessation of hostilities between the Entente and the Central Powers in November last, Mr. Sinha was for the third time called to England to attend the meetings of the Imperial War Cabinet and to help in the settlement of peace questions. Now he has been appointed the first Indian Under-Secretary. This position is not one of Cabinet rank, and as Mr. Sinha is not a member of the House of Commons, a peerage has been conferred on him to enable him to sit and represent the India Office in the House of Lords.



## CHAPTER X

---

### The Ruling Chiefs' Conference.

It was Lord Hardinge who invited the Ruling Princes of India in a conference of their own presided over by himself for the first time in 1916 to discuss the scheme of a higher Chiefs' College. H. E. Lord Chelmsford invited the Conference again in December, 1917, with an enlarged scope. His Excellency stated that he wished this Conference become an annual function. In this Conference H. H. the Maharaja of Bikaner, on behalf of all the ruling chiefs present, emphasised the fact that "we represent about one-third of the Indian Empire and about one fifth of its entire population" and for that reason "we feel that we too must keep a definite goal in front of us and whilst it is essential that our rights and privileges and our position as allies and friends guaranteed to us by solemn treaties and engagements with the British Government remain unaltered, our States cannot afford to lag behind in the general advance which India's association with Great Britain has rendered possible. It is, for these reasons, that we are now all the more anxious to see the early establishment of a constitutional chamber which may safeguard the interests and rights of ourselves and of our States.

As we clearly stated last year we have no desire to encroach upon the affairs of British India any more than we want outside interference in the affairs of our States and ourselves. It is hardly necessary, therefore, to repeat that we have no desire to claim a voice in the settlement of any matters other than those relating to ourselves and our States or which are of Imperial or common concern."

Similarly, H. H. the Maharaja Gaekwar of Baroda and other ruling chiefs in welcoming the Conference expressed the hope that what had, by that time, become an annual conference would develop into a permanent Council or Assembly of Princes. This proposal was put before Mr. Montagu and Lord Chelmsford when they were receiving deputations from representative bodies in India on the question of Indian Administrative Reforms. In their Report the two distinguished statesmen recommend that the Conference be replaced by the institution of a Council of Princes. "We wish," say they in the Report, "to call into existence a permanent consultative body. There are questions which effect the States generally and other questions which are of concern either to the Empire as a whole or to British India and States in common, upon which we conceive that the opinion of such a body would be of the utmost value. The Viceroy would refer

such questions to Council and we should have the advantage of their considered opinion. We think it is all important that the meetings should be regular and that ordinarily the Council should meet once a year to discuss agenda approved by the Viceroy. Any member of the Council or the Council as a whole might require the Viceroy to include in the agenda any subject on which discussion was desired. If questions of sufficient importance arise in the intervals between the annual meetings the Princes might suggest to the Viceroy that an extraordinary meeting should be held. We contemplate the Viceroy should be president and should, as a rule, preside but that in his absence one of the Princes should be chairman. The rules of business would be framed by the Viceroy after consultation with the princes who might, perhaps, from time to time, suggest modifications in the rules." The second proposal of Mr. Montagu and Lord Chelmsford is that the Council of Princes be invited annually to appoint small standing Committee to which the Viceroy or the Political department might refer on matters of custom and usage and in case of other difficulties.

It is needless to mention here at length the proposals of Mr. Montagu and Lord Chelmsford with regard to the future of Native States as they can be read in paragraphs 306 to 310 of the

Report. But the reform which every prince will most heartily welcome is the recommendation that, as a general principle, all important states should be placed in direct political relations with the Government of India.



## CHAPTER XI.

---

(1) THE DEFENCE OF INDIA ACT, (2) THE "ROWLATT ACT," (3) THE PUNJAB AND OTHER DISTURBANCES AND (4) THE MARTIAL LAW.

If the measures described in the preceding chapters of this part of the book have been distinct, albeit unsatisfactory, gains to the country as a result of the war, the latter event has been responsible for certain retrograde measures as well which outweigh the gains altogether. Similar to the notorious 'Dora' of the United Kingdom, the Government of India passed in the early months of the war the Defence of India Act. It was enacted for war purposes and was to remain in force only during the war and six months after. It armed the executive with powers to deal summarily with certain offences against the State. Educated India realised fully that in time of war, the Executive Government must have some extraordinary powers to deal summarily with certain classes of offences as the ordinary criminal courts of law take pretty long time in disposing of such cases and in war, time means a good deal. But knowing also full well the eccentricities and idiosyncracies of the Indian bureaucracy she was never confident that it would use the powers thus vested in it properly. On the assurances, however, of



Sir Reginald Craddock that the act was to be used strictly as a war measure, that it would not be used for the purpose of coercion, for dealing with offences which can be tried by the ordinary tribunals under the ordinary criminal laws, the Indian members of the Imperial Legislative Council gave their support to it. In the United Kingdom which was certainly exposed to greater internal and external danger than India, the Defence of the Realm Act was much milder both in its provisions and operation than its prototype in India. For instance, the English Act gave a right to the British subject to be tried by a Civil tribunal with a jury. The Indian Act provided no such safeguard. The former confined, under the rules, its operations to two things only, first that a person might be arrested and interned because he was of hostile origin and secondly because of hostile association. The Defence of India Act was not at all limited in this manner. A mere suspicion that a certain individual was likely to disturb public tranquility was enough to have brought him within the meshes of the act and interned or externed by an executive order that gave him no chance for defence. In England, a copy of the charge was given in writing to the accused and there was a special advisory committee presided over by an English Judge before whom he could make his defence, lay his statement and finally had the safeguard of having the legality of internment order tested before

the highest courts of justice by applying for a writ of *habeas corpus*. Here, in India, the grounds of internment were sparingly given and when they were given they were, not unoften, unconvincing. Apart from this, the Defence of India Act was used to punish all sorts of persons who offended against Anglo-Indian or bureaucratic notions and traditions. Mrs. Basant advocated the cause of constitutional reforms perhaps with more than ordinary vehemence and she was interned under this act. Mr. Gandhi to whose sterling political sanity Mr. Montagu paid such a glowing tribute in his last budget speech was prohibited entry into the provinces of the Punjab and Delhi under the same act. At one time there were over 1,600 persons in internment including zemindars, landholders, vakils, pleaders, students, professors of colleges, Kavirajes, doctors, and people of all shades. Many of them were incarcerated on mere suspicion. Now, it is a glorious principle of British jurisprudence that even ten guilty men may be allowed to escape rather than one innocent man should suffer. This principle was violated almost every day in India in connection with the use of the Defence of India Act. The case of the arrest of Sindhu, Bala Das in Bengal has become so widely known that a mere mention of it is enough to convince any body that the act was abused in a most flagrant manner. India never wished to see anarchists and revolutionaries, seditionists and

murderers to loom large in society at any time, much less during the war. India never wished the Germans to come and rule over her. It was all very well to have used the act against persons of hostile origin and association and it is possible that the use of the act has to some extent extirpated these breeds from India but even the most enthusiastic supporter of the present Government cannot say that the act was used only for this purpose and in the right manner. What was the result ? The employment of the act almost indiscriminately against anarchists and innocent persons gave rise to considerable mental unrest all over the country. It created a good deal of discontent and made the government unpopular, a result quite the reverse of what the authorities had desired. The public demanded a commission of enquiry into the working of the Defence of India Act and the numerous cases of internments. A committee was appointed but the method of investigation followed by it was not quite as the public wished it to be, and the result was that the findings thereof found little favour with the country.

*The Rowlatt Act.*—Ever since the ill-fated partition of Bengal in 1907, India has not been free of anarchists, conspirators and revolutionists. The measures adopted by the government to suppress them proved unsuccessful in the extreme. On 10th December, 1917, a committee was appointed

with Mr. Justice Rowlatt of the King's Bench Division "to investigate and report on the nature and extent of the criminal conspiracies connected with the revolutionary movement in India and to examine and consider the difficulties that have arisen in dealing with such conspiracies and to advise as to the legislation, if any, necessary to enable Government to deal effectively with them." This committee in their report recommended further repressive legislation - a recommendation thoroughly disapproved by the country.

The Government of India drafted a bill which, in some respects even exceeded the recommendations of the committee. There was an outburst of universal opposition in India. The non-official Indian members of the Indian Legislative Council, both elected and nominated, opposed the bill tooth and nail. But the government persisted in its course and passed the bill after it was amended by a select committee of the Council. This was probably the first legislative measure in the history of British India in the opposing whereof Indians, irrespective of their caste and creed, solidly united which was a proof that the measure was thoroughly unpopular. The Legislative Council, however, with its official majority passed the bill. An appeal was made, of course in vain, to H. E. the Viceroy to veto the bill. The Secretary of State was requested through telegrams to advise His Majesty to reject the measure but even he would not

listen. The Government was told beforehand by the non-official Indian members of the Council that in case the act was passed there would be an agitation in India which would be simply unprecedented in its nature and vehemence. But even this warning was not heeded. The act was passed. Certain most respected members of the Council such as the Hon'ble Pandit Madan Mohan Malaviya, Mr. M. A. Jinnah, Mr. B. D. Shukul and Mr. Mazharul Haque, realising that it was no use co-operating with a government which could treat popular opinion with such scant courtesy resigned their seats on the council. Mr. M. K. Gandhi realising a real danger to the liberties of His Majesty's Indian subjects in this act came forward to lead the agitation. Other widely respected gentlemen who were seldom seen on political platforms, such as Sir Rabindranath Tagore, Mahatma Swami Shradhanand gave up their seclusion and came forward to help the agitation.

*The Disturbances.* Mr. Gandhi started the *Satyagrah* movement which literally means "sticking to truth (whatever the sacrifice)." He enjoined upon his followers the observance of two principles in carrying on this movement, viz., "non-violence to person and property" and "no compulsion." He fixed Sunday the 30th March, as the day of humiliation, fasting and prayer, all business was to be suspended and demonstrations were to be held in the afternoon in every town,

village and hamlet. The citizens of Delhi observed this Sunday in accordance with these instructions. As there was a total suspension of business and people were seen loitering here and there sometimes in groups, the local officers of the government became nervous and prepared themselves lest there be any disturbances. This exhibition of nervousness on the part of the officials, coupled with the display of excessive enthusiasm on the part of certain persons who were in the heart of the movement led to disturbances. The Railway officials detained in their custody two of the leaders of the movement because the latter asked some licensed vendors at the Railway Station to stop selling their goods to the passengers. There gathered a crowd at the station which demanded the immediate release of the detenus. A few of the crowd were alleged to have thrown brickbats on the Railway people. These brickbats were answered by bullets from the other side. The people became excited, but unarmed as they were they could not do anything other than throwing brickbats and the like. There was another shooting and thus a number of valuable lives were lost. The citizens of Delhi were greatly alarmed; military pickets armed with rifles were to be seen at every place in the capital, armoured motor-cars patrolled the town. The citizens of Delhi would not under these conditions resume their business. This state of affairs gave rise to

universal discontent in India, Mr. Gandhi was going to Delhi to calm the situation by his personal appeals to the citizens of Delhi but he was served by an order of the Punjab Government not to enter the province under their jurisdiction. He was arrested at Palwal on his way to Delhi and sent back to Bombay. The news of his arrest proved to be the proverbial last straw. The Punjab resented this event the most, for which there were reasons. In the first place the Punjab has claimed Delhi as its own since a long time. In the second place, the arrest of Mr. Gandhi took place in the Punjab and under the orders of the Punjab Government and lastly, which is the most important, the province of the five rivers had been under the "strong" rule of the "strongest Lieutenant-Governor in India." The flame in the Punjab was fanned by the arrest and deportation of two of her respected citizens, Drs Satyapal and Kitchlew of Amritsar in the interval. This province had supplied no less than 390,000 men for the Indian army during the war and it is universally believed that the method adopted in recruiting was nothing short of compulsory. The strong rule of the unsympathetic and autocratic Sir Michael O'Dwyer had otherwise alienated the feelings of the population. When Mr. Gandhi was arrested on the 11th April, 1918, there was an outburst in certain towns of the Punjab. There was revolution, there

was anarchy, there were murders of Europeans, no doubt, but the ruler of the province instead of calming the situation in a statesmanlike manner, employed means which only aggravated the same. The story of Delhi was repeated in Lahore and Amritsar, Gujranwala and Kasur with far greater vehemence. 400 lives were lost besides there being a number of wounded persons. As was to be expected, not by the government of the time but by other right-thinking persons, peace was not restored. Disturbances continued and the Punjab Government declared Martial Law in certain areas.

*Martial Law*—Was Martial Law needed? Thinking India answers 'no.' Martial Law which is, in the words of Lord Morley "only a fine name for the suspension of all laws" can be justified only if and when the population is armed or there is wide spread rebellion. Surely local outbursts of unarmed people can be met with by more reasonable methods. The declaration of Martial Law was, as Mr. Gandhi would say, like a nasmyth hammer used for killing a fly. Sir Michael O'Dwyer said once that his province was in a state of open rebellion and he justified the Martial Law on that account. But almost simultaneously with it he made another statement which meant that although there were local disturbances here and there the province as a whole was loyal. Supposing for argument's sake that the Martial Law was



justified by the circumstances, was it administered rightly ? The answer of the country must again be in the negative. The *Mahratta* gave the following statistical abstract of the activities of the Martial Law Ordinance Commissions in the Punjab.

" The four Martial Law Commissions tried in all 596 alleged offenders of whom 214 were acquitted and 382 were found guilty and were given sentences varying from the extreme penalty of Law to rigorous imprisonment of some years. Out of these 382, capital sentence were passed on 77, and of these 77 some 7 only got a lease of life by the mercy of the Lieutenant-Governor who kindly commuted the sentences into transportation for life. Nearly 150 were meted out the punishment of spending the remaining part of their lives in Andamans. Thus out of 382 persons who were found guilty nearly 210 were either sentenced to be hanged or were transported for life".

It is universally believed in the country that the Martial Law authorities used their powers almost in a vindictive spirit. Almost all the respected leaders of the Punjab were brought under this law. Mr. Kali Nath Roy, the Editor of the *Tribune* and one of the most sober journalists of the country was charged of sedition and was sentenced to two years' imprisonment. That was the verdict of the Martial Law Commission whereas the leaders of the country both

lawyers and laymen have been saying that the articles alleged to be seditious were such as could not by any stretch of imagination come within the definition of that word.

It is gratifying that the Secretary of State has promised an enquiry into the whole affair. India believes that the enquiry will be impartial and thorough, that no idea of prestige will influence its verdict and in that case the true facts will be brought to light.



## CHAPTER XII.

### CONCLUSION.

In this war, history has repeated itself. In the abstract it was a war between the principles of liberty, justice, truth, democracy and self-determination on the side of the Allies and of autocracy, militarism, aggressiveness, physical force and despotism on that of the Central Powers. Such struggles are not unknown to India, the *Ramayana* and the *Mahabharat* are the depictment of the same story. And as always, right has once again triumphed over might. The Allies, though physically weakened, have come out of the struggle morally stronger than they were ever before. But where is the author of the war? He aspired to be the ruler of the world. Is he the ruler of the world to-day? Does he occupy even the Imperial Throne of Germany? The favourite of God on earth, as the Kaisar fondly believed himself to be, is literally wandering in the wilderness, perhaps repenting his actions. The world is after him for awarding suitable punishment to him who was responsible for such widespread misery and disaster. The Germans have been obliged to accept peace on any terms. The peace was signed on the 28th June, 1919. Germany sowed a storm and reaped a hurricane. She fully deserved the punishment.

meted out to her. But will the peace thus brought about last? It was believed and asserted by responsible statesmen of the world that this war would end war—will it? The answer is of a doubtful nature. The peace terms are such as do not inspire in us such a pious hope. The Allies could have afforded to be more magnanimous and generous in their victory. But let us wait and see.

What about India? In the supreme crisis of the Empire's fate, India was asked to help. The appeal for help was made not to the "despised natives" but to equals and comrades. The help was given loyally and ungrudgingly. No sooner Indians fought in France and Flanders shoulder to shoulder with British and Colonial troops than the entire outlook in India changed and by the time the war was over, the old India was dead, a new India arising. The conquerors of Mesopotamia could not be expected to revert tamely to the position of hewers of wood and drawers of water for a privileged bureaucracy. India, at one stride, claimed to become an equal partner in the Empire. Will the friendship established between England and India on the battlefield abide after the war? The answer can best be given by England. If she is anxious to keep up this friendship, to strengthen it in order to make herself stronger, she can do it. Her statesmen must adopt a policy of justice in relation to India.

Trust begets trust. Let British statesmen trust India and India will always remain a true friend, a friend who could be trusted in time of danger; on the other hand if India is not trusted, if she is ruled by the iron rod, history will again repeat itself and England may lose India some day. The war has been a war for the liberation of weaker nations. If India is not given the liberty which is enjoyed by other nations she will think of England and her Allies as nations of hypocrites. The principle of Self-Determination must be applied to her as it is being applied to other cases. The demands of her people who have a right to speak in her name must be fulfilled. Complete home rule must be given her in substantial and rapid instalments. Education must be pushed on in a way so that within the next 20 or 30 years there should be left no illiterate person in the country. Her commerce and industries must be developed on national lines as it is these which make a nation wealthy and great. All laws of repression must be repealed. Liberty of speech and Press must be restored. All distinctions between race and race must be done away with. The Services must be Indianised. In one word, India must be governed in the interest of Indians. The British people have made huge sacrifices during the war, let them make one more sacrifice, the sacrifice of their great prejudices for the sake of the ideal they no less died for—the British Commonwealth of Nations.

---

## APPENDIX.

### Details of the Indian Princes' Help.

#### MR. ROBERTS' STATEMENT IN THE HOUSE OF COMMONS.

In the House of Commons on the 9th September Mr. Charles Roberts read the following statement from the Viceroy of India giving details of the munificent offers of help by the various ruling Princes and Chiefs of India. This created a tremendous sensation in the House :—

"The following is a summary of the offers of service, money, etc., made in India to the Viceroy. The Rulers of Native States in India, who number nearly seven hundred in all, have with one accord rallied to the defence of the Empire, and offered their personal services and the resources of their States for the war. From among many princes and nobles who have volunteered for active service the Viceroy has selected the Chiefs of Jodhpur, Bikanir, Kishangarh, Rutlam, Sachin, and Patiala, Sir Partab Singh, Regent of Jodhpur, the Heir Apparent of Bhopal, and a brother of the Maharaja of Cooh Behar together with other cadets of noble families. The veteran Sir Partab would not be denied his right to serve the King-Emperor, in spite of his seventy years, and his nephew, the Maharaja who is but sixteen years old, is with him. (Loud cheers). The Chief of Gwalior in addition to sharing in the expenses of the hospitalship the idea of which originated with himself and the Begum of Bhopal, has offered to place large sums of money at the disposal of the Government of India, and to provide thousands of horses as remounts. From Loharu in the Punjab and Las Bela and Kelat in Baluchistan come offers of camels with drivers, to be supplied and maintained by the Chiefs and Sardars. Several Chiefs have offered to raise additional troops, for military service should they be required, and donations to the Indian Relief Fund have poured in from all States. The Maharaja of Rewa has offered his troops, his treasury, and even his private jewellery, for the service of the King-Emperor. (Cheers.)

"In addition to contributing to the Indian Fund some Chiefs, namely, those (sic) of Kashmir, not content with subscribing himself to the Indian Fund, presided at a meeting of 20,000 people held recently at Srinagar, and delivered a stirring speech, in response to which large subscriptions were collected. The Maharaja Holkar offers free of charge all the horses in his State which may be suitable for Government purposes. Horses have also been offered by the Nizam's Government, by the Jam of Jainsagar and other Bombay States. Every Chief in the Bombay Presidency has placed the resources of his State at the disposal of the Government, and all have made contributions to the Relief Fund. Loyal messages and offers have also been received from the Methar of Chitral and the tribes of the Khyber Agency, as well as from the Khyber Rifles.

Letters have been received from the most remote States in India, all of them marked by the deep sincerity of the desire to render some assistance, however humble, to the British Government in its hour of need. (Cheers.) Last, but not least, from beyond the borders of India have been received generous offers of assistance from the Nepal Durbar. The military resources of the State have been placed at the disposal of the British Government, and the Prime Minister has offered a sum of three lakhs of rupees to the Viceroy for the purchase of machine guns or field equipment for British and Gurkha regiments proceeding overseas; in addition to large donations from his private purse to the Prince of Wales's Fund and the Imperial Indian Relief Fund. To the 4th Gurkha Rifles, of which the Prime Minister is Honorary Colonel, the Prime Minister has offered Rs. 30,000, for the purchase of machine guns in the event of their going on service. The Dalai Lama of Tibet has offered a thousand Tibetan troops for service under the British Government. His Holiness also states that Lamas innumerable through the length and breadth of Tibet are offering prayer for the success of the British Army, and for the happiness of the souls of all victims of the war (Cheers.)

\* \* \* \* \*

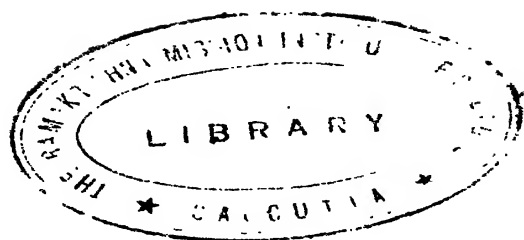
All these have, with Commander-in-Chief's approval, already joined the Expeditionary Forces. The Maharaja Scindia of Gwalior and the Chiefs of Jaora and Dholpur, together with the Heir Apparent of Palanpur, were to their great regret, prevented from leaving their States.

"Twenty-seven of the larger States of India maintain Imperial Service Troops, and the services of every corps were immediately placed at the disposal of the Government of India on the outbreak of the war. The Viceroy has accepted from twelve States contingents of cavalry, infantry, sappers, and transport, besides the camel corps from Bikanir, and most of them have already embarked. As particular instances of the generosity and eager loyalty of the Chiefs the following may be quoted. Various Durbars have combined together to provide a hospitalship to be called the "Loyalty," for the use of the Expeditionary Forces. The Maharaja of Mysore has placed fifty lakhs of rupees at the disposal of the Government of India for Expenditure in connection with the Expeditionary Force."

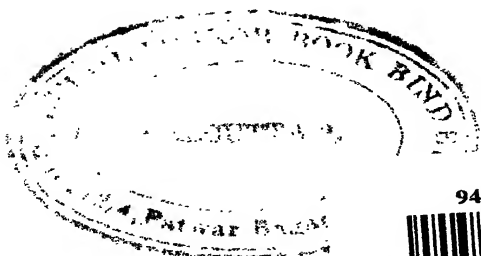
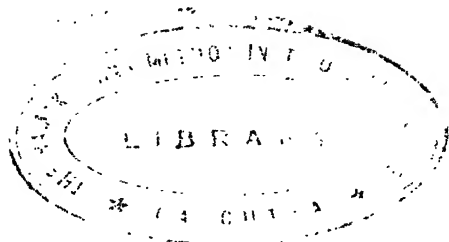
Mr. Roberts added that in addition similar offers had been made by Chiefs who happened to be at present in Europe. The Gaekwar of Baroda and the Maharaja of Bharatpur, to mention two only, had placed the whole resources of their States at the disposal of His Majesty's Government. The Indian community in England, including Indian students, had made loyal offer of service. Mr. Roberts concluded: "I feel confident that the House and country will feel deep appreciation of this magnificent demonstration of loyalty with which the princes and people of India have identified themselves with the cause of the Empire."











940.3/BHA



17881

